# PREDICTIVE MODELS FOR FOOTBALL MATCHES 

MsC in "Statistics and Operational Research"

Author: Ioannis Vakolas
Supervisor: Dr. Fotios Siannis

## Acknowledgements

I would like to express my immense gratitude to the leading supervisor, the professor Fotios Siannis, for his trust and his valuable assistance in carrying out this thesis. Additionally, I would like to thank the performance analyst of Asteras Tripolis, Thodoris Tsilimigkras. He contributed to the creation of the data frame for the application of the dissertation, by offering a huge data base which concerns the Greek Superleague. I would also like to express my deepest gratitude to my colleagues for the great collaboration we had with each other during my last academic experience. Finally, my gratefulness is extended to my family and friends for their support and confidence.


#### Abstract

Football is one of the most popular sports in the world. In recent years, more and more companies have been associated with football depending economically on it. This led to a huge statistical interest in the sport. This thesis constitutes a review on football modeling.

Initially, theory behind bivariate analysis is developed along with properties and extensions of the bivariate distribution. Special attention is paid to the bivariate Poisson distribution which is widely used in football modeling. Regression models constitute another subject of study as they provide functions that describe the relationship between random variables. In that part, count data models are presented such as Poisson regression model and the inflated models which deal with problems with excessive outcomes. As for the parameters estimation, the EM algorithm is considered to be a rational way to find the maximum likelihood estimate when the latter cannot be calculated in straightforward way.

After presenting the theoretical framework on with football modeling is based, several bivariate predictive models are presented in terms of four main categories: naïve models, models with dependence parameter, inflated models, dynamic models.

Finally, analysis of the Greek Superleague is carried out through four bivariate models. After the comparison of the models' fitting, prediction in a playoff match takes place.


## Contents

1. Bivariate Discrete Distribution ..... 5
1.1. Joint Distributions ..... 5
1.2. Marginal Distributions ..... 6
1.3. Generating Functions ..... 7
1.3.1. Probability Generating Function ..... 8
1.3.2. Moment Generating Function ..... 8
1.3.3. Cumulants Generating Function ..... 9
1.4. Trivariate Reduction ..... 10
1.5. The Bivariate Binomial Distribution ..... 11
1.6. The Bivariate Poisson Distribution ..... 12
1.7. Bivariate Correlation ..... 14
1.7.1. Pearson Correlation Coefficient ..... 15
1.7.2. Kendall Correlation Coefficient ..... 15
1.8. Bivariate Copulas ..... 16
1.8.1. Copula ..... 17
1.8.2. Types of Bivariate Discrete Copulas ..... 18
2. Regression Models ..... 21
2.1. Generalized Linear Model (GLM) ..... 21
2.1.1. Structure ..... 21
2.1.2. Deviance Goodness-of-Fit ..... 22
2.1.3. Over-dispersion in a GLM ..... 23
2.2. Count Data Models ..... 25
2.2.1. Poisson Regression ..... 25
2.2.2. Inflated Models ..... 26
2.3. Logit and Probit Models ..... 30
2.4. Ordinal Regression Models ..... 31
2.5. Auto-Regressive Processes ..... 33
2.6. Model Selection Criteria ..... 35
3. The EM algorithm ..... 37
3.1. Theoretical Framework ..... 37
3.2. The EM Method. ..... 39
3.3. Convergence of the EM Algorithm ..... 43
4. Football modeling ..... 46
4.1. Naïve Models ..... 46
4.1.1. The Bradley-Terry Ordinal Model ..... 47
4.1.2. The Double-Poisson Model ..... 51
4.1.3. The Negative Binomial Model ..... 54
4.2. Models with Dependence Parameter ..... 56
4.2.1. Two-dimensional Copula Model ..... 57
4.2.2. The Bivariate Poisson Model ..... 60
4.2.3. The Bivariate Conway-Maxwell Poisson Model ..... 65
4.3. Models with Inflation ..... 68
4.3.1. Diagonal Inflated Bivariate Poisson Model ..... 68
4.3.2. Dixon and Coles Model ..... 73
4.4. Dynamic Models ..... 75
4.4.1. Dixon and Coles Dynamic Model ..... 76
4.4.2. Koopman and Lit Model ..... 79
5. Application ..... 82
5.1. Analyzing the Greek Superleague ..... 82
5.1.1. Model Specification ..... 82
5.1.2. Data ..... 86
5.1.3. Fitting the Models ..... 89
5.1.4. Model Comparison ..... 95
5.2. Prediction ..... 97
5.2.1. Predicting a Playoff Match ..... 97
5.2.2. Betting odds ..... 99
Conclusion ..... 100
Bibliography ..... 101
A Appendix ..... 105
A1 Data Set ..... 105
A2 R-Code ..... 112
A3 The Newton-Raphson Method ..... 146

## Chapter 1

## Bivariate Discrete Distribution

In this chapter, we will present the bivariate discrete distributions as well as their properties. We consider the joint distribution of two random discrete variables $X$ and $Y$. They are assumed to have the probability mass function $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$ at the point $(x, y)$ with $(x, y) \in T$, where $T$ is a subset of the Cartesian product of the set of nonnegative integers on the real line. In this case the pair $(X, Y)$ is said to have bivariate discrete distribution over T with the probability function $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$.

### 1.1. Joint distributions

Definition (Joint cumulative distribution function) Let $X$ and $Y$ be two random variables defined on the same probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P[]$.$) where \Omega$ is the set of all possible outcomes and $\mathcal{A}$ is a set of events. Then the $(X, Y)$ is called a two-dimensional random variable. The joint cumulative distribution function or joint distribution function of $X$ and $Y$, denoted by $F_{X, Y}(x, y)$, is defined as

$$
F_{X, Y}(x, y)=P[X \leq x, Y \leq y], x, y \in \mathbb{R}
$$

## Properties:

1. If $x_{1}<x_{2}$ and $y_{1}<y_{2}$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left[x_{1}<X<x_{2}, y_{1}<Y<y_{2}\right]= \\
& \quad=F\left(x_{2}, y_{2}\right)-F\left(x_{2}, y_{1}\right)-F\left(x_{1}, y_{2}\right)+F\left(x_{1}, y_{1}\right) \geq 0
\end{aligned}
$$

2. (i) $F(-\infty, y)=\lim _{x \rightarrow-\infty} F(x, y)=0 \quad \forall y \in \mathbb{R}$
(ii) $F(x,-\infty)=\lim _{y \rightarrow-\infty} F(x, y)=0 \quad \forall x \in \mathbb{R}$
(iii) $F(\infty, \infty)=1$
3. $F(x, y)$ is right continuous for each argument:

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} F(x+h, y)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0^{+}} F(x, y+h)=F(x, y)
$$

Definition (Joint discrete density function) Let $X$ and $Y$ two random discrete variables. The joint discrete density function of $X$ and $Y$ is defined as

$$
f_{X, Y}(x, y)=P[X=x, Y=y],(x, y) \in T
$$

where $T$ is a subset of the Cartesian product of the set of the nonnegative integers on the real line.

### 1.2. Marginal distributions

When studying bivariate models, it may also be of interest to observe the behavior of the variables independently of each other. Taking the probability function of $X$ and $Y$ as $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$, the marginal probabilities for $X$ and $Y$ are respectively:

$$
f_{X}(x)=\sum_{y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)
$$

and

$$
f_{Y}(y)=\sum_{x} f_{X, Y}(x, y)
$$

It is remarkable that if $X$ and $Y$ are independent then,

$$
f_{X, Y}(x, y)=f_{X}(x) \cdot f_{Y}(y)=P[X=x] \cdot P[Y=y]
$$

Concerning the conditional discrete density functions, they are expressed as follows:

- $f_{Y \mid X}(y \mid x)=\frac{f_{X, Y}(x, y)}{f_{X}(x)}=\frac{P[X=x, Y=y]}{P[X=x]}$ if $f_{X}(x)>0$
- $f_{X \mid Y}(x \mid y)=\frac{f_{X, Y}(x, y)}{f_{Y}(y)}=\frac{P[X=x, Y=y]}{P[Y=y]}$ if $f_{Y}(y)>0$

Definition (Marginal cumulative distribution function) If $F_{X, Y}(x, y)$ is the joint cumulative distribution function of two random variables $X$ and $Y$, then the $F_{X}(x, y)$ and $F_{Y}(x, y)$, which are called marginal distribution functions of $X$ and $Y$ respectively, are defined as

$$
F_{X}(x)=P[X \leq x]=P[X \leq x, Y<\infty]=\lim _{y \rightarrow \infty} F_{X, Y}(x, y)=F_{X, Y}(x, \infty)
$$

and

$$
F_{Y}(y)=P[Y \leq y]=P[X<\infty, Y \leq y]=\lim _{x \rightarrow \infty} F_{X, Y}(x, y)=F_{X, Y}(\infty, y)
$$

### 1.3. Generating functions

When studying random variables, there is a variety of generating functions which helps us to point out the properties of the random variables. In this section we will introduce these functions.

### 1.3.1. Probability generating function

The probability generating function (PGF) $\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ of the pair of random variables $(X, Y)$ with probability function $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$ is the $\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X} t_{2}^{Y}\right]$. So PGF is defined as :

$$
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X} t_{2}^{Y}\right]=\sum_{(x, y) \in T} t_{1}^{x} t_{2}^{y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)
$$

The marginal PGF's are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Pi_{X}(t)=\sum_{x} f_{X}(x) t^{x}=\sum_{x} t^{x} \sum_{y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)=\Pi_{X, Y}(t, 1) \\
& \Pi_{Y}(t)=\sum_{y} f_{Y}(y) t^{y}=\sum_{y} t^{y} \sum_{x} f_{X, Y}(x, y)=\Pi_{X, Y}(1, t)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.3.2. Moment generating functions

The moment generating function (MGF) $M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ of the pair of random variables $(X, Y)$ with probability function $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$ is the $\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1} X+t_{2} Y}\right]$. So MGF is defined us:

$$
M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1} X+t_{2} Y}\right]=\sum_{(x, y) \in T} e^{t_{1} x+t_{2} y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)
$$

By recalling the exponential series,

$$
e^{t X}=1+t X+\frac{(t X)^{2}}{2!}+\frac{(t X)^{3}}{3!}+\cdots
$$

in the univariate case we have:

$$
\begin{gathered}
M_{X}(t)=\sum_{x} e^{t X} f_{X}(x)=\sum_{x}\left(f_{X}(x)+t X f_{X}(x)+t^{2} X^{2} f_{X}(x)+\cdots\right)= \\
=1+\mu_{1} t+\mu_{2} \frac{t^{2}}{2!}+\mu_{3} \frac{t^{3}}{3!}+\cdots
\end{gathered}
$$

with $\mu_{k}=\mathbb{E}\left[X^{k}\right] k=1,2,3 \ldots$
So in the bivariate case MGF becomes:

$$
\begin{gathered}
M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1} X+t_{2} Y}\right]=\sum_{x} \sum_{y} e^{t_{1} x+t_{2} y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)= \\
=\sum_{x} \sum_{y}\left(1+t X+\frac{(t X)^{2}}{2!}+\cdots\right)\left(1+t Y+\frac{(t Y)^{2}}{2!}+\cdots\right) f_{X, Y}(x, y) \\
=\sum_{r, s} \frac{t_{1}^{r}}{r!} \frac{t_{2}^{s}}{s!} \mu_{r, s}^{\prime}
\end{gathered}
$$

with the coefficients $\mu_{r, s}^{\prime}=\mathbb{E}\left[X^{r} Y^{s}\right]$.
The marginal MGF's are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{X}(t)=\sum_{x} e^{t x} f_{X}(x)=\sum_{x} e^{t x} \sum_{y} f_{X, Y}(x, y)=M_{X, Y}(t, 0) \\
& M_{Y}(t)=\sum_{y} e^{t y} f_{Y}(y)=\sum_{y} e^{t y} \sum_{x} f_{X, Y}(x, y)=M_{X, Y}(0, t)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.3.3. Cumulants generating functions

The cumulants generating function (CGF) $K\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)$ of the pair of random variables $(X, Y)$ with probability function $f(x, y)$ is the $\log$ of MGF. So CGF is defined as:

$$
K_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\log M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\sum_{r} \sum_{s} \frac{t_{1}^{r}}{r!} \frac{t_{2}^{s}}{s!} k_{r, s}
$$

where $k_{r, s}$ is called the cumulant of order $(r, s)$.

### 1.4. Trivariate reduction

Suppose that we have $X_{1}, X_{2}, X_{3}$ which are three independent and maybe identically distributed random variables. We can construct the random variables $X$ and $Y$ as:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& X=X_{1}+X_{3} \\
& Y=X_{2}+X_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus by using convolutions of three independent random variables, bivariate distributions can be generated, where a pair of observations from $f_{X, Y}(x, y)$ is obtained by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& x=x_{1}+x_{3} \\
& y=x_{2}+x_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

The method above is termed the trivariate reduction and it allows for dependence between the random variables of our study.

Now by taking under consideration the generating functions of $X_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3$ the joint PGF and MGF of $(X, Y)$ are respectively:

$$
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\Pi_{X_{1}}\left(t_{1}\right) \Pi_{X_{2}}\left(t_{2}\right) \Pi_{X_{3}}\left(t_{1} t_{2}\right)
$$

and

$$
M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=M_{X_{1}}\left(t_{1}\right) M_{X_{2}}\left(t_{2}\right) M_{X_{3}}\left(t_{1}+t_{2}\right)
$$

Proof: Let $X=X_{1}+X_{3}$ and $Y=X_{2}+X_{3}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X} t_{2}^{Y}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X_{1}+X_{3}} t_{2}^{X_{2}+X_{3}}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X_{1}} t_{1}^{X_{3}} t_{2}^{X_{2}} t_{2}^{X_{3}}\right] \\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X_{1}} t_{2}^{X_{2}}\left(t_{1} t_{2}\right)^{X_{3}}\right]=\Pi_{X_{1}}\left(t_{1}\right) \Pi_{X_{2}}\left(t_{2}\right) \Pi_{X_{3}}\left(t_{1} t_{2}\right) \\
M_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1} X+t_{2} Y}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1}\left(X_{1}+X_{3}\right)+t_{2}\left(X_{2}+X_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& =\mathbb{E}\left[e^{t_{1} X_{1}+t_{2} X_{2}+\left(t_{1}+t_{2}\right) X_{3}}\right]=M_{X_{1}}\left(t_{1}\right) M_{X_{2}}\left(t_{2}\right) M_{X_{3}}\left(t_{1}+t_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.5. The bivariate binomial distribution

It is widely known that the binomial distribution is the extension of the Bernoulli distribution and counts how many times an event $X$ has occurred in a specific number of trials. Now we will examine the bivariate case of the binomial distribution. To start with, one bivariate Bernoulli trial measures two random variables ( $I, J$ ), both with outcomes 0 and 1 . As a result, each trial has four possible outcomes: $(0,0),(0,1),(1,0),(1,1)$. The probabilities of the outcomes are constant over the trials and the trials are independent. We define

$$
p_{a b}=P(I=a, J=b) \quad a=0,1, b=0,1
$$

Similarly with the univariate case, considering a sequence of $n$ bivariate Bernoulli trials leads to a bivariate binomial distribution. It is defined

$$
X=\sum_{i=1}^{n} I_{i}
$$

and

$$
Y=\sum_{i=1}^{n} J_{i}
$$

The pair $(X, Y)$ is said to have bivariate binomial distribution.
The PGF of $(X, Y)$ is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{X} t_{2}^{Y}\right]=\left\{\mathbb{E}\left[t_{1}^{I} t_{2}^{J}\right]\right\}^{n} \\
& =\left(p_{00}+t_{1} p_{10}+t_{2} p_{01}+t_{1} t_{2} p_{11}\right)^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

So, the marginal PGF's are respectively

$$
\Pi_{X}(t)=\Pi_{X, Y}(t, 1)=\left\{\left(p_{11}+p_{10}\right) t+\left(p_{01}+p_{00}\right)\right\}^{n}
$$

and

$$
\Pi_{Y}(t)=\Pi_{X, Y}(1, t)=\left\{\left(p_{11}+p_{01}\right) t+\left(p_{10}+p_{00}\right)\right\}^{n}
$$

Reminding that the PGF of the binomial distribution with parameters $(\mathrm{n}, \mathrm{p})$ is

$$
\Pi_{X}(t)=(p t+q)^{n} \text { for all } t \in \mathbb{R}
$$

we notice that,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& X \sim \operatorname{Bin}\left(n, p_{11}+p_{10}\right) \\
& Y \sim \operatorname{Bin}\left(n, p_{11}+p_{01}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The bivariate binomial distribution is just an extension of the binomial distribution. In the univariate case we are counting the successes of a fact whereas in the bivariate case we are interested in how many times the events $X$ and $Y$ have occurred.

### 1.6. The bivariate Poisson distribution

The bivariate Poisson distribution can be defined by taking the limit ( $n \rightarrow \infty$ ) of the bivariate binomial distribution which has PGF

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\left(p_{00}+t_{1} p_{10}+t_{2} p_{01}+t_{1} t_{2} p_{11}\right)^{n} \\
& =\left\{\left(1+\left(p_{11}+p_{10}\right)\left(t_{1}-1\right)+\left(p_{11}+p_{01}\right)\left(t_{2}-1\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.+p_{11}\left(t_{1}-1\right)\left(t_{2}-1\right)\right\}^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

We assume that

$$
\begin{gathered}
p_{11}+p_{10}=\frac{\lambda_{1}}{n} \\
p_{11}+p_{01}=\frac{\lambda_{2}}{n} \\
p_{11}=\frac{\lambda_{3}}{n}
\end{gathered}
$$

where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ and $\lambda_{3}$ are positive constants independent of $n$.

Now, by substituting into the equation of the PGF of the bivariate binomial distribution it is:

$$
\Pi_{n}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{1}\left(t_{1}-1\right)}{n}+\frac{\lambda_{2}\left(t_{2}-1\right)}{n}+\frac{\lambda_{3}\left(t_{1}-1\right)\left(t_{2}-1\right)}{n}\right)^{n} .
$$

Taking into consideration the widely known limit $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(1+\frac{\lambda}{n}\right)^{n}=e^{\lambda}$ it is :

$$
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \Pi_{n}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\exp \left\{\lambda_{1}\left(t_{1}-1\right)+\lambda_{2}\left(t_{2}-1\right)+\lambda_{3}\left(t_{1}-1\right)\left(t_{2}-1\right)\right\}
$$

So we have

$$
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\exp \left\{\lambda_{1}\left(t_{1}-1\right)+\lambda_{2}\left(t_{2}-1\right)+\lambda_{3}\left(t_{1}-1\right)\left(t_{2}-1\right)\right\}
$$

If we set $\lambda_{1}=\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}$ and $\lambda_{2}=\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}$ the equation above becomes:

$$
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right)=\exp \left\{\lambda_{1}\left(t_{1}-1\right)+\lambda_{2}\left(t_{2}-1\right)+\lambda_{3}\left(t_{1} t_{2}-1\right)\right\}
$$

Looking at the PGF of the univariate Poisson distribution which is given by $\Pi_{X}(t)=\exp (\lambda(t-1))$, it is noticeable that this is the PGF of the bivariate Poisson distribution with parameters $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ and $\lambda_{3}$ for two random variables $X$ and $Y$.

## Probability function

By expanding the joint PGF above we have,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Pi_{X, Y}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right) & =\exp \left(\lambda_{1}\left(t_{1}-1\right)+\lambda_{2}\left(t_{2}-1\right)+\lambda_{3}\left(t_{1} t_{2}-1\right)\right) \\
& =e^{-\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)} \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{i} t_{1}^{i}}{i!} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{j} t_{2}^{j}}{j!} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda_{3}^{k} t_{1}^{k} t_{2}^{k}}{k!} \\
& =e^{-\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)} \sum_{r, s} \sum_{i} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{r-i} \lambda_{2}^{s-i} \lambda_{3}^{i}}{(r-i)!(s-i)!i!} t_{1}^{r} t_{2}^{s}
\end{aligned}
$$

As a result, we end up with the mass function,

$$
f_{X, Y}(x, y)=e^{-\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)} \cdot \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x}}{x!} \cdot \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y}}{y!} \cdot \sum_{k=0}^{\min (x, y)}\binom{x}{k}\binom{y}{k} k!\left(\frac{\lambda_{3}}{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}\right)^{k}
$$

which is the density of the bivariate Poisson distribution $B P\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right)$.

## Marginal distributions

The marginal PGF of $X$ is

$$
\Pi_{X}(t)=\Pi_{X, Y}(t, 1)=\exp \left\{\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)(t-1)\right\}
$$

and the marginal PGF of $Y$ is

$$
\Pi_{Y}(t)=\Pi_{X, Y}(1, t)=\exp \left\{\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)(t-1)\right\}
$$

So, respectively

$$
\begin{aligned}
& X \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right) \\
& \gamma \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.7. Bivariate correlation

In bivariate analysis, two variables that follow a joint distribution usually interact with each other. This can be described by the correlation coefficient which measures the strength of association between the two variables $X, Y$ and describe the type of their relationship. This coefficient takes values in the interval $[-1,1]$. If the coefficient takes the value +1 or the value -1 then there will be a perfect degree of association between the variables whereas when the coefficient takes the value 0 , it implies no dependence between the two variables. The sign indicates the direction of the relationship. If we have sign + then there will be positive relationship and if we have sign - then there will be negative relationship between the variables. Two basic types of correlation are Pearson correlation and Kendall correlation each of which adjusts to different occasions.

### 1.7.1. Pearson correlation coefficient

In statistics, the Pearson correlation coefficient, also known as Pearson's $r$ (or $\rho$ ), is a measure of linear correlation between two sets of data. It is retrieved when the covariance of two variables $X, Y$ is divided with the product of their standard deviations. That is,

$$
r_{X, Y}=\frac{\operatorname{COV}(X, Y)}{\sigma_{X} \sigma_{Y}}=\frac{n \sum^{n} x_{i} y_{i}-\sum^{n} x_{i} \sum^{n} y_{i}}{\sqrt{n \sum^{n} x_{i}^{2}-\left(\sum^{n} x_{i}\right)^{2}} \sqrt{n \sum^{n} y_{i}^{2}-\left(\sum^{n} y_{i}\right)^{2}}} .
$$

It is essentially a normalized measurement of the covariance.

### 1.7.2. Kendall rank correlation coefficient

In statistics, the Kendall rank correlation coefficient, also known as Kendall's $\tau$, is a measure of the ordinal association between two quantities. Ordinal data is a statistical data type where the variables have natural, ordered categories and the distances between these categories are unknown.

Let $\left(x_{1}, y_{1}\right), \ldots,\left(x_{n}, y_{n}\right)$ be a set of observations of the joint random variables $X, Y$, such that all the value of $x_{i}$ and $y_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$ are unique. Any pair of the observations ( $\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}}, \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}$ ) and $\left(\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{j}}, \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)$, where $\mathrm{i}<j$, will be said to be concordant if the sort order of $\left(\mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}}, \mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)$ and $\left(\mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}, \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}\right)$ is the same. That is, when both $x_{i}>x_{j}$ and $y_{i}>y_{j}$ happen or both $x_{i}<$ $x_{j}$ and $y_{i}<y_{j}$ happen. On the other hand, if the sort order is opposite the observations will be said to be discordant. In the specific case where $x_{i}=x_{j}$ or $y_{i}=y_{j}$, then the pair of observations are said to be tied.

Definition (Kendall's $\boldsymbol{\tau}$ coefficient) Let us denote $n_{c}$ the number of concordant pairs and $n_{d}$ the number of discordant pairs of $n$ observations of the pair $(X, Y)$ of the random variables $X, Y$. The Kendall's $\tau$ coefficient is defined as

$$
\tau=\frac{n_{c}-n_{d}}{\binom{n}{2}}
$$

where $\binom{n}{2}=\frac{n(n-1)}{2}$ is the number of pairings between $X, Y$.
It is reasonable that if all the pairings between $X$ and $Y$ are concordant then the $\tau$ coefficient will be equal to 1 . On the other side, if all the pairings between $X$ and $Y$ are discordant then the value of $\tau$ will be equal to -1 .

Actually, the total number of pairings between $X$ and $Y$ is equal to $n_{c}+n_{d}+n_{0}=\binom{n}{2}$ where $n_{c}, n_{d}$ is the numbers of the concordant and the discordant pairs respectively, and $n_{0}$ is the number of tied pairs. However, as we can distinguish in the definition above, the tied pairs are not taken into consideration for the calculation of Kendall's $\tau$ coefficient.

### 1.8. Bivariate Copulas

When we have two dependent on each other discrete random variables, we can find their joint cumulative distribution function by using a two-dimensional copula. Copulas are linking functions which link univariate marginal distributions together allowing for dependence between the random variables with a dependence parameter $\theta$. These functions enable us to isolate the dependency structure in a multivariate distribution. So it is easy for us to separate the marginal distributions from the dependence structure of a given multivariate distribution.

### 1.8.1. Copula

Definition (Copula) A d-dimensional copula, $C:[0,1]^{d} \rightarrow[0,1]$ is a cumulative distribution function (CDF) with uniform marginals. For a generic copula we write

$$
C(u)=C\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{d}\right)=P\left(U_{1} \leq u_{1}, \ldots, U_{d} \leq u_{d}\right) .
$$

## Properties:

1. $C\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{d}\right)$ is non-decreasing for each component $u_{i}$.
2. The marginal distribution of the $i^{\text {th }}$ component is obtained by setting $u_{k}=1$ for $k \neq i$ in $C(u)$.
3.C $\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{i-1}, 0, u_{i+1}, \ldots, u_{d}\right)=0$ if any one of the components is 0 .

We now recall the definition of generalized inverse for a CDF, F .

Definition (generalized inverse) Let $F$ a cumulative distribution function (CDF). Then, the generalized inverse $F^{-1}$, is defined as

$$
F^{-1}(x):=\inf \{u: F(u) \geq x\} .
$$

Proposition If $U \sim U[0,1]$ and $F_{X}$ is a CDF, then

$$
P\left(F^{-1}(U) \leq x\right)=F_{X}(x)
$$

In the case of a continuous $C D F$, then $F_{X}(X) \sim U[0,1]$

Theorem (Sklar's Theorem) Consider a d-dimensional CDF, $F$, with marginals $F_{1}, \ldots, F_{d}$. Then there exists a copula $C$, such that

$$
F\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{d}\right)=C\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, F_{d}\left(x_{d}\right)\right)
$$

for all $x_{i} \in[-\infty,+\infty]$ and $i=1, \ldots, d$.
In the bivariate case, a copula function can be expressed as follows:

$$
C\left(u_{1}, u_{2} \mid \theta\right)=P\left(U_{1} \leq u_{1}, U_{2} \leq u_{2}\right)
$$

In this expression, we have two independent and identically distributed standard uniform variables $U_{1}, U_{2}$ and $\theta$ is a dependence parameter.

Let $X_{i}$ with a continuous CDF $F_{i}$, then the transform $F_{i}\left(X_{i}\right)$ must be uniformly distributed. As a result the joint bivariate CDF with marginal CDF's $F_{1}$ and $F_{2}$ can be written as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
F\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right) & =P\left(X_{1} \leq x_{1}, X_{2} \leq x_{2}\right) \\
& =P\left(F_{1}\left(X_{1}\right) \leq F_{1}\left(x_{1}\right), F_{2}\left(X_{2}\right) \leq F_{2}\left(x_{2}\right)\right) \\
& =P\left(U_{1} \leq F_{1}\left(x_{1}\right), U_{2} \leq F_{2}\left(x_{2}\right)\right) \\
& =C\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1}\right), F_{2}\left(x_{2}\right) \mid \theta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.8.2. Types of bivariate discrete copulas

Now we will assume that $X_{i}$ has a discrete CDF and not a continuous one like the occasion above. In the case of discrete distributions like the Poisson or the negative binomial distribution, the marginal cumulative distribution functions are step functions with jumps at integer values. This results to not having unique $F_{i}^{-1}$. For that cases there are several types of copula which have different domains of the dependence parameter $\theta$ :

- Frank Copula

A basic type of copula for discrete occasions is the Frank copula type where $\theta \in(-\infty,+\infty)-\{0\}=\mathbb{R}-\{0\}$. The Frank copula is expressed as follows:
$C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)\right)=\frac{1}{\theta} \log \left(1+\frac{\left(\left(\exp \left(\theta F_{X}(x)\right)-1\right)\left(\exp \left(\theta F_{Y}(y)\right)-1\right)\right.}{\exp (\theta)-1}\right)$
where $F_{X}, F_{Y}$ are the marginal discrete cumulative distribution functions.

- Gumbel Copula

A second type of copula is the Gumbel copula where $\theta \in[1,+\infty)$. It is expressed as follows:

$$
C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)\right)=e^{\left\{\left[-\log \left(F_{X}(x)\right)\right]^{\theta}+\left[-\log \left(F_{Y}(y)\right)\right]^{\theta}\right\}^{\frac{1}{\theta}}}
$$

- Joe Copula

Joe copula is also a type of copula with $\theta \in[1,+\infty)$ and which is expressed as :

$$
C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)\right)=1-\left[\left(1-F_{X}(x)\right)^{\theta}+\left(1-F_{Y}(y)\right)^{\theta}-\left(1-F_{X}(x)\right)^{\theta}\left(1-F_{Y}(y)\right)^{\theta}\right]^{\frac{1}{\theta}}
$$

- Clayton Copula

Another type of copula is Clayton copula, where $\theta \in(0,+\infty)$ and it is expressed as follows:

$$
C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)\right)=\left[\left(F_{X}(x)\right)^{-\theta}+\left(F_{Y}(y)\right)^{-\theta}-1\right]^{-\frac{1}{\theta}}
$$

The types of copulas that were mentioned, are some basic bivariate copulas. There are also other types of bivariate copulas such as the Normal copula, Student's copula etc.

The proper choice of copula depends a lot on the domain of $\theta$ which is connected with the type of the dependence that our variables have each other.

## Chapter 2

## Regression Models

As it is known, the components of the regression models with $i$ observations are: the dependent variable which is observed and denoted as the observation $Y_{i}$, the independent variables which are also observed and denoted as the vector $X_{i}$, the unknown parameters (coefficients) which are often denoted as the vector $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and the error terms $\varepsilon_{i}$. The general form of a regression model is:

$$
Y_{i}=f\left(X_{i}, \beta\right)+\varepsilon_{i}
$$

The aim of the researchers is to choose the function $f$ that closely fits the data. Several choices of the function $f$ lead to different types of regression.

### 2.1. Generalized linear models (GLM)

### 2.1.1. $\quad$ Structure

The basic regression model is the linear regression model which is based on the normal probability function and is expressed as

$$
\Upsilon=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{0}+\boldsymbol{\beta} X+\varepsilon
$$

However, linearity cannot deal with a variety of practical situations such as counts (they will be explained in the next paragraph).
The generalized linear model (GLM) is a generalization of the ordinary linear model as it extends the concept of the linear regression model. It generalizes the linear regression by allowing the linear model to be related to the response variable via a link function.

Definition (Link Function) We assume the regression model with $i$ observations. For the $i-$ th observation, let $y_{i}=f\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)$, where $x_{i}^{T}=$ $\left(x_{i 1}, \ldots, x_{i p}\right)$ is a vector of $p$ explanatory variables and $\boldsymbol{\beta}^{\boldsymbol{T}}=$ $\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{\boldsymbol{p}}\right)$ is a vector of coefficients. Additionally let $g$ be a differentiable function of $f\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)$ such that $g\left(f\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)=x_{i}^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right.$. Then the function $g$ is called link function.

### 2.1.2. Deviance goodness-of-fit

When a Generalized Linear Model (GLM) is fitted, then a deviance goodness-of-fit test is used to show the explanatory power of the model. In this procedure, the actual model is compared with the saturated model. The saturated model has achieved a perfect fit as the number of the parameters is equal to the number of observations. However, the saturated model isn't actually an excellent choice as it doesn't smooth the data. As a result, a simpler model which uses only a few predictors may have more advantages. Nevertheless, the saturated model is useful for testing the fit of other models. So by denoting as $L(\hat{\lambda} ; \boldsymbol{y})$ the maximized log-likelihood for the model being tested and as $L(\boldsymbol{y} ; \boldsymbol{y})$ the maximized log-likelihood in the saturated case, we have the following test statistic:

$$
D(\boldsymbol{y} ; \hat{\lambda})=-2[L(\hat{\lambda} ; \boldsymbol{y})-L(\boldsymbol{y} ; \boldsymbol{y})]
$$

where $\hat{\lambda}$ is a vector of predictors of the observation $\mathbf{y}$.
The expression $D(\boldsymbol{y} ; \hat{\lambda})$ is called deviance and we have that $D(\boldsymbol{y} ; \hat{\lambda}) \sim X_{n-p}^{2}$ where $n$ is the number of parameters in the saturated model and $p$ is the number of parameters in the model being tested. If the deviance is small then the model will be a good fit for the data. This occurs because the observed values are close to the predicted ones given by the model.

### 2.1.3. Over-dispersion in GLM

We consider $n$-dimensional vector of observations $Y=\left(Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right)$ and a theoretical model that describes $Y$. Over-dispersion occurs when the observed variance of the data is higher than it would be expected. In other words, it occurs when the variance of the observations is greater the variance of theoretical model. Some distributions do not have a specific parameter to fit the variation of the observations. A typical example is the Poisson distribution where the mean is described equally to the variance by a parameter $\lambda$. In, this case, for an expected value of $Y, \mathbb{E}[Y]=10$, we expect that the variance of the observed data points is also 10. In contrast, the Normal distribution describes separately the variance through the parameter $\sigma^{2}$.
Let us give an example of over-dispersion. Imagine the number of seedlings in a forest plot. Depending on the distance to the source tree, there may be many hundreds or none. Such data would be overdispersed for a Poisson distribution.
In statistics, dispersion parameter $\varphi$ is a parameter which is associated to whether the observed variance of the data is greater than the variance of the theoretical model or not (over-dispersion or under-dispersion).
If the distribution of a variable $Y$ belongs to the exponential family, then its density function can be written as,

$$
f(y ; \theta, \varphi)=\exp \left(\frac{y \theta-b(\theta)}{a(\varphi)}+c(y, \varphi)\right)
$$

where $\theta$ is the parameter of interest and $\varphi$ is the dispersion parameter. In this form the expected value and the variance of $Y$ are expressed,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}[Y]=b^{\prime}(\theta) \\
\operatorname{Var}[Y]=b^{\prime \prime}(\theta) a(\varphi)
\end{gathered}
$$

For instance, in the case of the exponential family form of the Normal distribution we have:

$$
f\left(y ; \mu, \sigma^{2}\right)=\exp \left\{-\frac{y \mu-\frac{1}{2} \mu^{2}}{\sigma^{2}}+\left(-\frac{y^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}+\log (\sigma \sqrt{2 \pi})\right)\right\}
$$

where $\theta=\mu, b(\theta)=\frac{1}{2} \mu^{2}, a(\varphi)=\sigma^{2}, \mathbb{E}[Y]=\mu, \operatorname{Var}[Y]=\sigma^{2}$
In order to assess whether there is over-dispersion in a model or not, we can evaluate the ratio of the residual deviance divided by the degrees of freedom so that $\varphi$ is estimated,

$$
\hat{\varphi}=\frac{\text { Residual deviance }}{\text { Degrees of freedom }}=\frac{D(\boldsymbol{y}, \hat{\lambda})}{n-p}
$$

where $n-p$ is the difference between the number of the parameters of the saturated model and the model being tested.
In a Poisson GLM, the estimated variance can be expressed as $\operatorname{Var}[Y]=\varphi \mathbb{E}[Y]$. So, the Poisson assumption indicates $\varphi=1$ which yields that the variance is equal to the expectation. If $\hat{\varphi}>1$ there is over-dispersion in the model, and if $\hat{\varphi}<1$, there is under-estimation. So, it is remarkable that if $\hat{\varphi}>1$, the Poisson assumption is not correct.

### 2.2. Count data models

When discussing about modeling count data, it's important to clarify the meaning of count data. Generally, count data refer to observations made about events or items that are enumerated. In statistics, count data refer to observations that have only nonnegative integer values ranging from zero to some undetermined value. Theoretically, counts can range from zero to infinity. However, they are always limited to a distinct maximum value. There are many count data examples such as the number of children that a couple has, the number of someone's doctor visits, the number of goals achieved by a football team etc.

### 2.2.1. Poisson regression

Poisson regression model is the basic model which a variety of count models are based on. It is derived by the Poisson probability mass function, which can be expressed as

$$
f\left(y_{i} ; \lambda_{i}\right)=\frac{e^{-\lambda_{i} t_{i}}\left(\lambda_{i} t_{i}\right)^{y_{i}}}{y_{i}!}, y_{i}=0,1,2, \ldots
$$

where $y_{i}$ is the $i$-th observation-count response, $\lambda_{i}$ is the mean number of events in a time period of length $t_{i}$. When $\lambda_{i}$ is understood as applying to individual counts without consideration of size or time, then $t_{i}=1$. The mean number of the evens $\lambda_{i}$ is modeled as follows:

$$
\lambda_{i}=t_{i} f\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}\right) \quad, i=1, \ldots, n
$$

where $x_{i}^{T}=\left(x_{i 1}, \ldots, x_{i p}\right)$ is a vector o $p$ explanatory variables, $\boldsymbol{\beta}^{T}=$ $\left(\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{p}\right)$ is a vector of coefficients and $f$ is the rate function.

The distributions of the exponential family have corresponding link functions that are called canonical links. In the case of Poisson regression, we have a log-link function. Moreover, since the Poisson distribution values are nonnegative, using a link function whose inverse function takes only nonnegative numbers is purposeful.

By using the log-link function, we have,

$$
\log \left(\lambda_{i}\right)=\log \left(t_{i}\right)+x_{i}^{T} \beta, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
$$

where the $\log \left(t_{i}\right)$ can be transferred to the left side of the equation above. This will finally lead to the consideration of the $\log \left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{t_{i}}\right)$ as the response variable.

### 2.2.2. Inflated Models

Many times, when modeling the outcomes of a variable we notice underestimation over a specific outcome. Quite often, this specific outcome is zero. Count data with many zeros are common in a wide variety of experiments. In order to manage this occurrence, it is often useful to use a mixture of models in order to correct this underestimation. A specific kind of mixture distribution is the inflated model, which inflates the probability of this underestimated outcome in our study.
Random variables are usually considered as a sample from a distribution. However, there are random variables that cannot be described from one single distribution alone. Most of real-life random variables are generated from a mixture of distributions.

Definition (Mixture Distribution) Let us consider $k$ distributions $\left\{g_{1}\left(x ; \theta_{1}\right), \ldots, g_{k}\left(x ; \theta_{k}\right)\right\}$ and $k$ coefficients $\left\{w_{1}, \ldots, w_{k}\right\}$. Then the mixture distribution $f$ of the densities $g_{i}$ with the weights $w_{i}$ for $i=$ $1, \ldots, k$ is defined as:

$$
f\left(x ; \theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{k}\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{k} w_{i} g_{i}\left(x ; \theta_{i}\right),
$$

subject to $\sum_{i=1}^{k} w_{i}=1$.
The densities $g_{i}$ from the definition above are not necessarily from the same family. However, this makes the problem sometimes complex.

## Zero-Inflated models

In many real life statistical experiments we often observe many zeros. This is something that cannot be modeled using standard modeling approaches for count data. Let us give a simple example:

We consider 200 people in a large boat and we want to see their success in fishing. We take observations about how many fishes each one caught and so we have the following graph of frequency:


NUMBER OF FISHES CAUGHT

In the graph above we can distinguish a large amount of zeros in which some are real and some excess. Real zeros are connected with people who fish but did not manage to catch any fish. Excess zeros are associated with people that may not even fish, for instance some women or little children. However, all 200 people of this boat are included in our study so it is necessary to deal with this.

Zero-inflated models take into account excess zeros data. They estimate two equations: a count model and a model for the excess number of zeros.

Definition (Zero-Inflated Model) Assume the state $X_{0}$ which is 0 with probability 1 and the state $X_{1}$ which is a random variable taking nonnegative integers with probability function $P\left(X_{1}=x\right)=g(x, \lambda)$ for $x=0,1, \ldots$, where $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{s}\right)^{T}$ is an unknown parameter vector in an open subset $D$ of $s$-dimensional space $\mathbb{R}^{s}$. Now consider the mixture of $X_{0}$ and $X_{1}$ with the Bernoulli( $p$ ) where $0 \leq p<1$. Zeroinflated model is defined as

$$
f_{\text {ZIM }}(x, \boldsymbol{\theta})=\left\{\begin{aligned}
p+(1-p) g(0, \lambda), & \text { for } x=0 \\
(1-p) g(x, \lambda), & \text { for } x=1,2, \ldots
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\theta}=\binom{p}{\lambda} \in \boldsymbol{\Theta}=(0,1] \times D$. The mixture above is denoted as $X \sim Z I M(\boldsymbol{\theta}, g)$ or simply $X \sim Z I M(\theta)$.

The mean of the zero-inflated count data model is:

$$
\mathbb{E}(X)=\sum_{k=0}^{+\infty}(1-p) g(k, \lambda)=(1-p) \mathbb{E}_{g}(X)
$$

where $\mathbb{E}_{g}(X)$ denotes the mean of $g$.
A common type of zero-inflated model is the Poisson zero-inflated regression model.

## - Zero-Inflated Poisson regression

When the Poisson regression model is applied to the count outcome data in real world, it is not rare to see the poor model fit indicated by a deviance. Most of the real data violate the assumption of the standard Poisson model, which is called equidispersion (the variance of the count outcome is equal to the mean). In most of the real data over-dispersion is observed (Sun Y. Jeon 2013). Ignoring overdispersion and applying the standard Poisson regression for this data can cause underestimation of standard errors and p-values.

The zero-inflated Poisson (ZIP) is an alternative that can be considered in this case. This model allows for over-dispersion assuming that there are two types of individuals in the data (Sun Y. Jeon 2013):

1) those who have a zero count with probability of 1 ("always 0 group")
2) those who have counts predicted by the standard Poisson. ("not always 0 group")

Observed zero could be either from the zero count or the standard Poisson.

The observation $i$ is in "always 0 group" with probability $p_{i}$ and the latter can be predicted by a logit or probit model (these models will be presented in the paragraph 2.3.). The probability that observation $i$ is in "not always 0 group" becomes $1-p_{i}$. For observations in the second group, their positive count outcome is predicted by the standard Poisson $\left(\lambda_{i}\right)$. The overall model is a mixture of the probabilities from the two groups above. As a result, for the $i$-th observation:

$$
f_{Z I P}\left(y_{i}\right)= \begin{cases}p_{i}+\left(1-p_{i}\right) e^{-\lambda_{i}}, & \text { if } y_{i}=0 \\ \left(1-p_{i}\right) \frac{e^{-\lambda_{i}} \lambda_{i}^{y_{i}}}{y_{i}!}, & \text { if } y_{i}>0\end{cases}
$$

where $f_{\text {ZIP }}$ the density of the zero-inflated Poisson model.
The mean and the variance of the model above are,

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i}\right]=0 \cdot p_{i}+\lambda_{i} \cdot\left(1-p_{i}\right)=\lambda_{i} \cdot\left(1-p_{i}\right)
$$

and

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left[Y_{i}\right]=\lambda_{i}\left(1-p_{i}\right)\left(1+p_{i} \lambda_{i}\right)
$$

respectively.

### 2.3. Logit and probit models

The logistic models (logit models) and the probit models are the statistical models that model the probability $\mu$ (expected value) of one event taking place out of two alternatives. They are among the most widely used members of the family of GLM models in the case of binary dependent variables.
Let $\eta=x \boldsymbol{\beta}$ a linear model where $\eta$ is a response variable, x is vector of explanatory variables and $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ is a vector of coefficients.

In the logit models the link function relating the linear predictor $\eta=$ $x \boldsymbol{\beta}$ to the expected value $\mu$ is the logit transform,

$$
\log \left(\frac{\mu}{1-\mu}\right)=\eta=x \boldsymbol{\beta}
$$

Solving $\mu$ in the equation above results to the logistic function,

$$
\mu(x)=\frac{e^{x \beta}}{1+e^{x \beta}}=\frac{1}{1+e^{-x \boldsymbol{\beta}}}
$$

In the probit models the link function that relates the linear predictor $\eta=x \boldsymbol{\beta}$ to the expected value $\mu$ is the inverse normal cumulative distribution function,

$$
\Phi^{-1}(\mu)=\eta=x \boldsymbol{\beta}
$$

Suppose a response variable $Y$ is binary ( 1 or 0 ) and we consider a vector of regressors $X$ that influence the outcome $Y$. The model takes the form,

$$
P[Y=1 \mid X]=\Phi\left(X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)
$$

where $\Phi$ is the cumulative distribution function of the standard normal distribution.

Considering a latent variable $Y^{*}=X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}+\varepsilon$ where $\varepsilon \sim N(0,1)$, the probit model above may transformed to the model,

$$
Y=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
1, & Y^{*}>0 \\
0, & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

As a result,

$$
\begin{aligned}
P[Y=1 \mid X] & =P\left[Y^{*}>0\right] \\
& =P\left[X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}+\varepsilon>0\right] \\
& =P\left[\varepsilon>-X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right] \\
& =P\left[\varepsilon<X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right] \\
& =\Phi\left(X^{T} \boldsymbol{\beta}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 2.4. Ordinal regression models

In statistics, ordinal regression, also called ordinal classification, is a type of regression analysis used for the prediction of an ordinal variable. The value of an ordinal variable exists on an arbitrary scale where only the relative ordering between different values is significant. A typical example of ordinal regression is ordered probit.

## Ordered Probit ModeI

Let $Y_{i}$ be individual i's response variable and assume that this can take an integer value on the set $[0, J]$. Let $y_{i}^{*}$ be the underlying latent variable representing $i$ 's tendency to agree with the statement advanced. The ordered probit model is based on the assumption that $y_{i}^{*}$ depends linearly on $x_{i}$ :

$$
y_{i}^{*}=x_{i} \beta+e_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
$$

where $e_{i} \sim N(0,1)$ and $\beta$ is a vector coefficients not containing an intercept.

The relationship between $y^{*}$ and the observed variable $Y$ is expressed as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Y=1 \text { if }-\infty<y^{*}<\kappa_{1} \\
& Y=2 \text { if } \kappa_{1}<y^{*}<\kappa_{2} \\
& Y=3 \text { if } \kappa_{2}<y^{*}<\kappa_{3} \\
& \cdot \\
& \cdot \\
& Y=J \text { if } \kappa_{J-1}<y^{*}<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

The parameters $\kappa_{j}=1, \ldots, J-1$ are known as cut points or threshold parameters.

As a result, the probability of each ordinal outcome is expressed,

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left[Y_{i}=j\right]= & P\left[\kappa_{j-1}<y_{i}^{*}<\kappa_{j}\right]=P\left[\kappa_{j-1}<x_{i} \beta+e_{i}<\kappa_{j}\right] \\
& =P\left[\kappa_{j-1}-x_{i} \beta<e_{i}<\kappa_{j}-x_{i} \beta\right] \\
& =\Phi\left(\kappa_{j}-x_{i} \beta\right)-\Phi\left(\kappa_{j-1}-x_{i} \beta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The figure below depicts the density function of $y^{*}$ for the case of $J=$ 4 (Anne R. Daykin , Peter G. Moffatt).


The absence of the intercept parameter is a consequence of the $J-1$ cut points all being free parameters; they are not predefined by the model but they can be chosen or estimated experimentally or theoretically. If one of the cut points were normalized to zero, then the intercept parameter would become identified and would appear in the model.

### 2.5. Auto-regressive processes

The most common model for correlated data is a class of time series models which are called auto-regressive processes. These processes are used a lot in the football dynamic models where the abilities of the teams change over time. These models will be presented in Chapter 4 (paragraph 4.4.).

Definition (Time series process) A time series process is stochastic process $\left\{X_{t} \mid t \in T\right\}$, which is a collection of random variables ordered in time. The set $T$ is called index set and it determines the set of times at which the process is defined and observations are made.

There are two sets of conditions under which the theory is built:

- Stationary process (the mean and the variance don't change over time)
- Ergodic process (the statistical properties of the process can be deduced from a single, sufficiently long, random sample of the process)

Definition (Auto-regressive process) Let $Z_{t}$ be a random process with mean 0 and variance $\sigma_{z}^{2}$ where each $Z_{t}$ is independent. An autoregressive process of order $p$, denoted $A R(p)$, is given by

$$
X_{t}=a_{1} X_{t-1}+\cdots+a_{p} X_{t-p}+Z_{t}
$$

where $X_{0}=X_{-1}=\cdots=X_{1-p}=0$

In the expression above, correlation is introduced between the random variables by the regression of $X_{t}$ on past values $X_{t-1}, \ldots, X_{t-p}$. The parameters $\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{p}$ are the coefficients of the auto-regressive process where $a_{i}$ is called the lag $i$ coefficient.

## The $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ process

An $A R(1)$ process is given by

$$
X_{t}=a X_{t-1}+Z_{t}
$$

In order to calculate the mean and variance of the process:

$$
X_{t}=a X_{t-1}+Z_{t}=a\left(a X_{t-2}+Z_{t-1}\right)+Z_{t}=\cdots=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{j} Z_{t-j}
$$

As a result,

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[X_{t}\right]=\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{j} Z_{t-j}\right]=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{j} \mathbb{E}\left[Z_{t-j}\right]=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{j} \cdot 0=0
$$

and

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left[X_{t}\right]=\operatorname{Var}\left[\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{j} Z_{t-j}\right]=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \operatorname{Var}\left[a^{j} Z_{t-j}\right]=\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{2 j} \cdot \sigma_{z}^{2}
$$

The variance is comprised of an infinite sum, so its value depends on $a$.

- If $|a| \geq 1$ (non-stationary) then $\operatorname{Var}\left[X_{t}\right]=\infty$
- if $|a|<1$ (stationary) then it is known for a geometric series:

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{2 j}=1+a^{2}+a^{4}+\cdots=\frac{1}{1-a^{2}}
$$

As a result,

$$
\operatorname{Var}\left[X_{t}\right]=\sigma_{Z}^{2} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} a^{2 j}=\frac{\sigma_{Z}^{2}}{1-a^{2}}
$$

### 2.6. Model selection criteria

In many statistical problems, obtaining the optimal model is the main good. For this purpose, some selection model criteria have been developed, which are based on the maximum likelihood of the model and the number of the parameters estimated. All these criteria are based on the Kullback-Leibler divergence.

Definition (Kullback-Leibler divergence) Let us consider the probability measures $P, Q$ defined in the same space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$ where $\mathcal{X}$ is the set of all possible outcomes, $\mathcal{A}$ is a set of events and $P$ is absolutely continuous on $Q \quad(Q(A)=0 \Rightarrow P(A)=0, \forall A \in \mathcal{A})$. The KullbackLeibler divergence (or relative entropy) from $Q$ to $P$ is defined to be

$$
D_{K L}(P \| Q)=\int_{X} \log \left(\frac{d P}{d Q}\right) d P
$$

For discrete cases the KL-distance is expressed as,

$$
\sum_{x \in X} P(x) \log \left(\frac{P(x)}{Q(x)}\right)=\mathbb{E}_{P}[\log P(x)]-\mathbb{E}_{P}[\log Q(x)]
$$

In an actual problem, we have a sample of observations from the unknown mass function $P$ which is modeled by the mass function $Q(\cdot \mid \theta)$. If we want to compare different models with respective mass functions $Q_{i}\left(\cdot \mid \theta_{i}\right)$, this can take place through an equivalent comparison of the divergences $D_{K L}\left(P \| Q_{i}\right)$, where the best model is that with the shortest divergence from the actual mass function $P$. From the equation above, it is clear that the best model is that with the largest $\mathbb{E}_{P}[\log Q(x \mid \theta)]=\mathbb{E}_{P}[l(\theta)]$.

The theory above leads to the following definitions of model selection criteria.

Definition (AIC and BIC) Let us consider a sample of observations, a model with vector of parameters $\theta \in \Theta \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{k}$ and the maximum likelihood estimator $\hat{\theta}$. The Aikake Information Criterion and the Bayesian Information Criterion are defined to be

$$
A I C=-2 \log L(\hat{\theta})+2 k \quad \text { and } \quad B I C=-2 \log L(\hat{\theta})+k \log n
$$

respectively.
These criteria contain a "penalty" for the number of the model parameters. The BIC has greater "penalty" for the parameters than AIC, which also increases according to the sample size.

## Chapter 3

## The EM algorithm

The Expectation-Maximization (EM) algorithm is a broadly applicable type of iterative computation of maximum likelihood (ML) estimates. It is mainly used in incomplete-data problems. Its basic idea is to solve a succession of simpler problems which occur when we augment the observed variables (incomplete data) with a set of additional variables (missing data) that are unobservable or unavailable.

### 3.1. Theoretical Framework

Maximum likelihood estimation (MLE) is a widely known method of estimating the parameters of a probability function, given some observed data. In this procedure, the aim is to obtain the point of the parameter space that maximizes the likelihood function so that the observed data is most probable. This point is called maximum likelihood estimate. Specifically, our objective is to maximize the likelihood $L(\theta)=g(x ; \theta)$ as a function of $\theta$, after assuming the observed data $x$ with probability density function $g(x ; \theta)$, and with $\theta$ being a vector of unknown parameters in the parameter space. In order to maximize the likelihood,

$$
\frac{\partial L(\theta)}{\partial \theta}=0
$$

or equivalently,

$$
\frac{\partial \log L(\theta)}{\partial \theta}=0
$$

However, in many statistical problems where the likelihood or loglikelihood is not quadratic, due to missing data, dependence or nonnormal errors, the maximum likelihood estimate cannot be obtained by solving a simple equation or a linear system. In these situations, ML estimate is obtained by using numerical iterative methods of solution of equations such as Newton-Raphson approach. In the next paragraph, we will present an additional iterative method, the EM algorithm, which offers an attractive alternative in a variety of settings.

The EM algorithm is an iterative method which deals with estimating parameters in problems where the likelihood is complicated in structure resulting in difficult-to-compute maximization problems. A typical case is that of missing data problems. In such problems we can formulate an associated statistical problem with augmented data from which it is possible to work out the MLE. The augmented data is often called 'complete' data and the available data is called 'incomplete' data, and the corresponding likelihoods are the 'complete-data likelihood' and the 'incomplete-data' likelihood respectively. The EM algorithm is a generic method that computes the MLE of the incomplete-data problem by formulating a complete data problem. Basically it takes advantage of the simplicity of the MLE of the complete-data problem and it finally computes the MLE of the incomplete-data problem.

Let us give an example (Maya R. Gupta, Yihua Chen 2010).
"Consider the temperature outside your window for each of the 24 hours of a day, represented by $x \in \mathbb{R}^{24}$, and say that this temperature depends on the season $\theta \in\{$ summer, autumn,winter,spring\}, and that you know the seasonal temperature distribution $p(x \mid \theta)$. But what if you could only measure the average temperature $y=\bar{x}$ for some day, and you would like to estimate what season $\theta$ it is. In particular, you might seek the maximum likelihood estimate of $\theta$, that is the value $\hat{\theta}$ that maximizes $p(y \mid \theta)$."

The EM algorithm is a suitable technique that can deal with the problem above.

### 3.2. The EM Method

In order to use EM, we have to be given some observed data $y$, a parametric density function $f(y \mid \boldsymbol{\theta})$, a description of some complete data $x$ that we don't have. We assume that the complete data can be modeled as continuous random vector $X$ with density $f_{c}(x ; \boldsymbol{\theta})$ where $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Omega$ for some set $\Omega$.

Definition (complete-data log-likelihood) We let $f_{c}(x ; \boldsymbol{\theta})$ denote the probability density function of the random vector $X$ which corresponds to the complete-data vector $x$, with $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Omega$ where $\Omega$ a parameter space. Then the complete-data log-likelihood function is given by

$$
\log L_{c}(\boldsymbol{\theta})=\log f_{c}(x ; \boldsymbol{\theta})
$$

The EM algorithm deals with the problem of solving the incompletedata likelihood equation indirectly via iterative calculations of $\log L_{c}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$. As it is unobservable, it is replaced by its conditional expectation given observable data $y$ every time.
The procedure is described as follows:

- Firstly, let $k=0$ and make an initial estimate $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}$ for $\boldsymbol{\theta}$.
- Given the observed data $y$ and pretending for the moment that our current guess $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}$ is correct, we formulate the conditional probability distribution $f_{c}\left(x \mid y, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)$ for the complete data $x$.
- Using the probability distribution $f_{c}\left(x \mid y, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)$, we form the conditional expected $\log$-likelihood, which is called $Q$-function:

$$
Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)=\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}\left\{\log L_{c}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \mid y\right\}
$$

- We find the value of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ that maximizes the $Q$-function, $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)}$. This is the new estimate.
- Let $k:=k+1$ and we go back to the second "bullet".

The traditional description of the EM algorithm consists of two main steps.

On the $(k+1)$-th iteration, the steps are, the Expectation Step (E-Step) and the Maximization Step (M-Step).
$\boldsymbol{E}$-STEP: Compute the expected value of $\log L_{c}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ given the observed data $y$, and the current parameter estimate $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}$. It is defined,

$$
Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)=\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}\left\{\log L_{c}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \mid y\right\}
$$

M-STEP: Choose $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)}$ to be any value of $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Omega$ so that:

$$
Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right) \geq Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right) \quad \forall \boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Omega
$$

In other words, the $M$-Step consists of maximizing over $\theta$ the expectation computed in the E-Step.

The E-steps and the M -steps are alternated repeatedly until the procedure stops due to convergence.

Let us give an example from Maya R. Gupta and Yihua Chen (2010) to illustrate the use of the method above.

Let us consider $n$ kids which choose one toy out of four choices. Let $y=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, y_{3}, y_{4}\right)^{T}$ denote the histogram of their $n$ choices, where $y_{i}$ the number of kids that chose toy $i$, for $i=1,2,3,4$. We can model this random histogram $y$ as being multinomially distributed. In this case, the multinomial density function is expressed as,

$$
f(y \mid p)=\frac{n!}{y_{1}!y_{2}!y_{3}!y_{4}!} p_{1}^{y_{1}} p_{2}^{y_{2}} p_{3}^{y_{3}} p_{4}^{y_{4}}
$$

where $n$ is the number of kids asked, that is $n=y_{1}+y_{2}+y_{3}+y_{4}$ and $p=\left(p_{1}, p_{2}, p_{3}, p_{4}\right)$ is vector of probabilities with $p_{i}$ being the probability that toy $i$ is chosen, $i=1,2,3,4$.

By assuming that the probability $p$ of choosing each of the toys is parameterized by some value $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in(0,1)$ we have,

$$
p_{\theta}=\left(p_{1}, p_{2}, p_{3}, p_{4}\right)^{T}=\left[\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \frac{1}{4}(1-\boldsymbol{\theta}), \frac{1}{4}(1-\boldsymbol{\theta}), \frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right]^{T}
$$

The estimation problem is to guess the value of $\theta$ that maximizes the probability of the observed histogram $y$. According to the parameterization above the multinomial function in our case becomes,

$$
f(y \mid p)=\frac{n!}{y_{1}!y_{2}!y_{3}!y_{4}!}\left(\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{y_{1}}\left(\frac{1-\boldsymbol{\theta}}{4}\right)^{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1-\boldsymbol{\theta}}{4}\right)^{y_{3}}\left(\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}}{4}\right)^{y_{4}} .
$$

For this simple example, the MLE can be easily found but we will instead illustrate how to use the EM algorithm to find the MLE of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$.

To illustrate the EM algorithm, we represent $y$ as incomplete data from a five-category multinomial distribution (complete data) where the cell probabilities are,

$$
q_{\theta}=\left[\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \frac{1}{4}(1-\boldsymbol{\theta}), \frac{1}{4}(1-\boldsymbol{\theta}), \frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right]^{T}, \boldsymbol{\theta} \in(0,1) .
$$

The idea is to split the first of the original four categories into two categories. Thus, the complete data is $x=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}\right)$ where $y_{1}=x_{1}+x_{2}, \quad y_{2}=x_{3}, \quad y_{3}=x_{4}, \quad y_{4}=x_{5}$ and the complete data density function is,

$$
f_{c}(x \mid \theta)=\frac{n!}{x_{1}!x_{2}!x_{3}!x_{4}!x_{5}!}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{x_{1}}\left(\frac{\theta}{4}\right)^{x_{2}}\left(\frac{1-\theta}{4}\right)^{x_{3}}\left(\frac{1-\theta}{4}\right)^{x_{4}}\left(\frac{\theta}{4}\right)^{x_{5}}
$$

Our aim is to maximize the $Q$-function, that is to find $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\kappa+1)}$ so that, $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\kappa+1)}=\operatorname{argmax} Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)=\operatorname{argmax} \mathbb{E}_{X \mid y, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}\left\{\log f_{c}(x \mid \boldsymbol{\theta})\right\}$.
As stated above, two steps are required.
Expectation Step: The E-Step estimates the sufficient statistics of the complete data $x$, given the observed data $y$. In our case, ( $x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}$ ) are known to be ( $y_{2}, y_{3}, y_{4}$ ). The only sufficient statistics that need to be estimated are $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ where $x_{1}+x_{2}=y_{1}$. After all, despite the fact that the value of $y_{1}$ is known, $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ remain unknown. Estimating $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ using the current estimate of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ leads to,

$$
x_{1}^{(k)}=y_{1} \cdot \frac{\frac{1}{2}}{\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}=\frac{2}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}} y_{1}
$$

and

$$
x_{2}^{(k)}=y_{1} \cdot \frac{\frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}}{\frac{1}{2}+\frac{1}{4} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}}=\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}} y_{1}
$$

As a result,

$$
x \left\lvert\, y=\left(x_{1}^{(k)}, x_{2}^{(k)}, x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}\right)=\left(\frac{2}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}} y_{1}, \frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}} y_{1}, y_{2}, y_{3}, y_{4}\right)\right.
$$

and

$$
Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)=\left(\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}} y_{1}+y_{4}\right) \log \theta+\left(y_{2}+y_{3}\right) \log (1-\boldsymbol{\theta})
$$

Maximization Step: The M-Step becomes:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)} & =\operatorname{argmax}_{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in(0,1)} Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{argmax}_{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in(0,1)}\left[\left(\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(\boldsymbol{k})}} y_{1}+y_{4}\right) \log \boldsymbol{\theta}+\left(y_{2}+y_{3}\right) \log (1-\boldsymbol{\theta})\right] \\
& =\frac{\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}} y_{1}+y_{4}}{\frac{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}}{2+\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}} y_{1}+y_{2}+y_{3}+y_{4}}
\end{aligned}
$$

The procedure above is repeated till the convergence of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ to a $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}$ which is considered to be the MLE of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$.

### 3.3. Convergence of the EM algorithm

While the EM algorithm is in progress, the $(k+1)$ th guess $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)}$ is never found to be less than the $k$ th guess $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}$. This property is called monotonicity of the EM algorithm (Maya R. Gupta, Yihua Chen 2010). The monotonicity of the EM algorithm guarantees that while the EM algorithm is in progress the guesses-values of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ won't get any worse in terms of their likelihood, but it cannot guarantee the convergence of the sequence $\left\{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right\}$. Actually, there is no general convergence theorem for the EM algorithm; the convergence of the sequence $\left\{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right\}$ depends on the characteristics of the log-likelihood and $Q\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} ; \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right)$.

The convergence of the EM algorithm is determined by using a suitable stopping rule like,

$$
\left|\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)}-\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k)}\right|<\varepsilon
$$

for some $\varepsilon>0$.

So when the rule above happens then the procedure stops with $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}=$ $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(k+1)}$ being the result-estimate of the incomplete-data problem.

Theorem (EM algorithm inequality) If the observable likelihood $L(\boldsymbol{\theta} \mid y)$ is bounded, then the value of $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*}$ to which the algorithm converges, is a local maximum of $L(\boldsymbol{\theta} \mid y)$.

Proof: Initially, we have that

$$
L(\theta \mid y, x)=f_{\theta}(x, y)=f_{\theta}(y) f_{\theta}(x \mid y)=L(\theta \mid y) f_{\theta}(x \mid y)
$$

and with logarithm in the equation above it is

$$
\ell(\theta \mid y, x)=\ell(\theta \mid y)+\log f_{\theta}(x \mid y)
$$

If $X$ is an absolutely continuous random variable, by multiplying the equality members with the density $f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y)$ and by integrating by $x$ :

$$
\int \ell(\theta \mid y, x) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x=\int \ell(\theta \mid y) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x+\int \log f_{\theta}(x \mid y) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d c
$$

Respectively, if $X$ were a discrete random variable, we would multiply with the probability $\mathbb{P}_{\theta^{(0)}}(X=x \mid y)$ and we would take the sum by $x$ instead of integrating.

We observe that:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\int \ell(\theta \mid y, x) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x=\mathbb{E}[\ell(\theta \mid y, X) \mid y]=Q_{\theta^{(0)}}(\theta) \\
\int \ell(\theta \mid y) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x=\ell(\theta \mid y) \int f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x=\ell(\theta \mid y)
\end{gathered}
$$

Now, we set,

$$
\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}(\theta)=-\int \log f_{\theta}(x \mid y) f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x=-\mathbb{E}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left[\log f_{\theta}(X \mid y) \mid y\right]
$$

So the observable likelihood is analytically written as:

$$
\ell(\theta \mid y)=Q_{\theta^{(0)}}(\theta)+\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}(\theta)
$$

Now by using Jensen inequality we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left(\theta^{(1)}\right) & -\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left(\theta^{(0)}\right) \\
& =-\mathbb{E}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left[\log f_{\theta^{(1)}}(X \mid y) \mid y\right]+\mathbb{E}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left[\log f_{\theta^{(0)}}(X \mid y) \mid y\right] \\
& =-\mathbb{E}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left[\left.\frac{\log f_{\theta^{(1)}}(X \mid y)}{\log f_{\theta^{(0)}}(X \mid y)} \right\rvert\, y\right] \\
& \geq-\log \mathbb{E}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left[\left.\frac{\log f_{\theta^{(1)}}(X \mid y)}{\log f_{\theta^{(0)}}(X \mid y)} \right\rvert\, y\right] \\
& =-\log \int \frac{\log f_{\theta^{(1)}}(x \mid y)}{\log f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y)} \log f_{\theta^{(0)}}(x \mid y) d x \\
& =-\log \int \log f_{\theta^{(1)}}(x \mid y)=-\log 1=0
\end{aligned}
$$

This inequality is known as the fundamental inequality of EM algorithm. If $\theta^{(0)}$ is the current estimate of $\theta$, then this inequality shows us that for any value of our next estimate $\theta^{(1)}$, the function $\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}(\cdot)$ will not be smaller than the current value $\mathcal{H}_{\theta^{(0)}}\left(\theta^{(0)}\right)$. As the function $\mathcal{H}$ is increased in every step of the EM algorithm, we can ignore $\mathcal{H}$ and focus on the function $Q$.

If we select any value $\theta^{(1)}$ that increases the value of the function $Q_{\theta^{(0)}(\cdot)}$, that is $Q_{\theta^{(0)}}\left(\theta^{(1)}\right)>Q_{\theta^{(0)}}\left(\theta^{(0)}\right)$, then we will have $\ell\left(\theta^{(1)} \mid y, x\right)>l\left(\theta^{(0)} \mid y, x\right)$. By repeating this procedure, we produce a sequence of estimates which increases the value of the observable likelihood in every step of the algorithm and finally converges to a local maximum.

It is clear that, if we select precisely the value that maximizes the function $Q_{\theta^{(0)}}(\cdot)$ as $\theta^{(1)}$, that is $\theta^{(1)}=\operatorname{argmax}_{\theta} Q_{\theta^{(0)}}(\theta)$, then the algorithm will have the maximum speed of convergence. This is the aim of the EM algorithm. However, even if the analytical maximization of the function $Q_{\left.\theta^{(0)}\right)}(\cdot)$ is not feasible, the algorithm will anyway converge to a local maximum of the observable likelihood if we select in every step a new estimate that increases, even a little, the current value of the function $Q$.

## Chapter 4

## Football Modeling

It is true that football is probably the most popular sport in the world. Football's history began in England in 1863 where people were kicking a leather ball filled with feathers and hair in their neighborhoods and, after a continuous evolution, it became an international attraction. In recent years, more and more companies have been associated with football depending economically on it and more and more staff has been working on it. Moreover, the sport has become extremely competitive and complicated. These facts have led to a huge statistical interest in the sport. Visualizations, performance analytics, outcome prediction etc, came to improve players and teams making their performance more effective.

Football is a low-score sport with a lot of surprises and changes during a match which make it hard to predict the final outcome. A lot of statistical modeling has been developed in order to assist professionals of all kinds to improve their influence on the sport. In this chapter we will show different types of statistical models like win-draw-loss models and score models which are used in predicting the outcome of football matches.

### 4.1. Naive Models

In this paragraph we will present some basic and easy-to-use statistical models with their characteristics that can be used in predicting football outcomes. Although these models do not have specific properties that are essential in football modeling, they are an obvious initial approach.

### 4.1.1. The Bradley-Terry ordinal model

The Bradley-Terry model is a preliminary simplistic model which can predict the outcome of a paired comparison. Given a pair of individuals $i$ and $j$ drawn from some population with $X_{i}, X_{j}$ being variables relating to $i$ and $j$ respectively, it estimates the probability that the pairwise comparison $X_{i}>X_{j}$ turns out true, as

$$
P\left(X_{i}>X_{j}\right)=P\left(Y_{i j}=1\right)=\frac{p_{i}}{p_{i}+p_{j}}
$$

where $p_{i}$ is a positive real-valued score assigned to individual $i$ and $Y_{i j}$ is a binary variable; if $Y_{i j}=1$ then $X_{i}>X_{j}$ and if $Y_{i j}=0$ then $X_{i}<$ $X_{j}$. In the case of a football game, $i$ is the home team, $j$ is the away team, $X_{i}$ denotes the goals that team $i$ achieved in the match and $p_{i}$ represents the ability of team $i$. Actually, $P\left(X_{i}>X_{j}\right)$ is the probability of team $i$ prevailing over team $j$.The Bradley-Terry model uses exponential score functions $p_{i}=e^{\gamma_{i}}$ so it can be written as

$$
P\left(X_{i}>X_{j}\right)=P\left(Y_{i j}=1\right)=\frac{e^{\gamma_{i}}}{e^{\gamma_{i}}+e^{\gamma_{j}}}=\frac{e^{\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}}}{1+e^{\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}}}
$$

where the parameters $\gamma_{i}$ are associated with the ability of the teams and need to be estimated. For example, $\gamma_{i}$ could have information about the rate of chances that team $i$ generally creates during a match. It is clear that the outcome of the game is determined by the difference $\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}$. For identifiability, a sum-to-zero constraint to the parameters is needed, $\sum_{i} \gamma_{i}=0$.

We can notice that the model above has only two outcomes (win or lose) and that is the reason that the Bradley-Terry model can be preferably used in basketball games rather than football games, where one of the two teams win in the end. For football matches we have to extend the model above by taking into consideration the case of a draw. An early approach on such modeling was the Rao-Kupper model (1967) which consists of two types of models:

- Model A:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left(X_{i}>X_{j}\right)=\frac{p_{i}}{p_{i}+\theta p_{j}} \\
& P\left(X_{i}<X_{j}\right)=\frac{p_{j}}{p_{j}+\theta p_{i}} \\
& P\left(X_{i}=X_{j}\right)=\frac{p_{i} p_{j}\left(\theta^{2}-1\right)}{\left(p_{i}+\theta p_{j}\right)\left(p_{j}+\theta p_{i}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

- Model B:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P\left(X_{i}>X_{j}\right)=\frac{p_{i}}{p_{i}+p_{j}+v \sqrt{p_{i} p_{j}}} \\
& P\left(X_{i}<X_{j}\right)=\frac{p_{j}}{p_{j}+p_{i}+v \sqrt{p_{i} p_{j}}} \\
& P\left(X_{i}=X_{j}\right)=\frac{v \sqrt{p_{i} p_{j}}}{p_{i}+p_{j}+v \sqrt{p_{i} p_{j}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $\theta=1$ and $v=0$ respectively we get no draws.

By extending the binary Bradley-Terry model to a model with three categories; the variable $Y_{i j}$ is coded as 2 if the home team wins, 1 in the case of draw and 0 in the case of victory of the visiting team, we lead to the cumulative probabilities in the form

$$
P\left(Y_{i j} \leq k\right)=\frac{\exp \left(\mu_{k}+\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mu_{k}+\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}\right)}, k \in\{0,1,2\}
$$

where $\mu_{0}<\mu_{1}<\mu_{2}$ are unknown cut-point parameters-thresholds which determine the preference for each specific category.
The probability for a single response category can be derived as follows,

$$
P\left(Y_{i j}=k\right)=P\left(Y_{i j} \leq k\right)-P\left(Y_{i j} \leq k-1\right)
$$

By slight abuse of notation, in the pursuit of completeness we define the threshold of the last category $\mu_{2}=+\infty$ so that $P\left(Y_{i j} \leq 2\right)=1$.
The model is over-parameterized in the sense that it is exactly the same even if we add a fixed constant $\alpha$ to all values $\gamma_{i}$ because the differences $\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}$ remain unchanged. The constant $a$ may denote the home advantage. Therefore,

$$
P\left(Y_{i j} \leq k\right)=\frac{\exp \left(\mu_{k}+\alpha+\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}\right)}{1+\exp \left(\mu_{k}+\alpha+\gamma_{i}-\gamma_{j}\right)}, k \in\{0,1,2\}
$$

The constant parameter $\alpha$ can be replaced by $\alpha_{i}$ so that home effects are team-specific instead of being equal for all teams. Concerning the ability $\gamma_{i}$ of team $i$, it is given by

$$
\gamma_{i}=\beta_{i} z_{i}
$$

where $z_{i}$ is a vector of covariates and $\beta_{i}$ is vector of coefficients.

By assuming the latent linear predictor of the ordered model,

$$
Y_{i j}^{*}=\alpha_{i}+\beta_{i} z_{i}-\beta_{j} z_{j}+\varepsilon
$$

where $\varepsilon \sim N(0,1)$ represents the error term, the ordinal categories re

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
Y_{i j}=0, & \infty<Y_{i j}^{*} \leq \mu_{0} \\
Y_{i j}=1, & \mu_{0}<Y_{i j}^{*} \leq \mu_{1} \\
Y_{i j}=2, & \mu_{1}<Y_{i j}^{*}<\infty
\end{array}
$$

## Estimation

Maximum likelihood estimation is applied to estimate the value for the parameters $\beta_{i}, \beta_{j}$ and the thresholds $\mu_{k}, k=0,1$. The loglikelihood function $\ln L$ of the model is,

$$
\ln L=\sum_{i, j, Y_{i j}=0}\left(\ln F_{i j 0}\right)+\sum_{i, j, Y_{i j}=1}\left(\ln F_{i j 1}-\ln F_{i j 0}\right)+\sum_{i, j, Y_{i j}=2}\left(-\ln F_{i j 1}\right)
$$

where $F_{i j k}, k=0,1$ are the cumulative probabilities of the model.
By maximizing the equation of the log-likelihood for each parameter, the estimates for the parameters are obtained.

### 4.1.2. The Double Poisson model

The Poisson distribution has been widely accepted as a simple modeling approach for the distribution of the number of goals in sports involving two competing teams.
We assume for the $i$-th match, $i=1, \ldots, n$ that ( $X_{1}, X_{2}$ ), which denote the achieved goals by the two opponents, are modeled as two conditionally independent Poisson,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& X_{1 i} \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{1 i}\right) \\
& X_{2 i} \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with joint density function the Double Poisson probability function $f_{D P}$,

$$
f_{D P}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=e^{-\lambda_{1}} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x_{1}}}{x_{1}!} \cdot e^{-\lambda_{2}} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x_{2}}}{x_{2}!}
$$

The parameters $\lambda_{1 i}, \lambda_{2 i}$ represent the scoring rates, that is the expected number of goals for the home and the away team respectively in the $i$-th observation-game.
Starting with the probability Poisson mass function in order to obtain the exponential dispersion form and indentify the link function for the parameters estimation we have the following steps:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f\left(x_{i} ; \lambda\right)=\frac{e^{-\lambda_{i} \lambda^{x_{i}}}}{x_{i}!}=\exp \left(x_{i} \log \left(\lambda_{i}\right)-\lambda_{i}-\log \left(x_{i}!\right)\right) \Rightarrow \\
& a(\varphi)=1, \quad \theta_{i}=\log \left(\lambda_{i}\right) \Leftrightarrow \lambda_{i}=e^{\theta_{i}}, \quad b\left(\theta_{i}\right)=\lambda_{i}=e^{\theta_{i}}, \\
& c\left(x_{i}, \varphi\right)=\log \left(\frac{1}{x_{i}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

In the exponential dispersion family, $\theta_{i}$ is the canonical parameter which depends on a model of linear predictors. Therefore, the log of the expectation, $\log \left(\lambda_{i}\right)$ can be modeled by Poisson regression as,

$$
g\left(\lambda_{i}\right)=\theta_{i}=\log \left(\lambda_{i}\right)=\boldsymbol{\beta} x
$$

where $x$ is a vector of explanatory variables and $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ is a vector of coefficients.
The scoring rate of the $k$ th team in the $i$ th match $\lambda_{k i}$ depends on the attacking ability of the team $k$ as well as on the defensive ability of the opponent (Joel Liden 2016). As a result,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \log \left(\lambda_{1 i}\right)=\mu+\text { home }+a t t_{h_{i}}+\text { def }_{a_{i}}, \\
& \log \left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)=\mu+a t t_{a_{i}}+\operatorname{def}_{h_{i}},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $a t t_{k}$ and $d e f_{k}$ are the attack and defense parameters of the team $k$ respectively, $h_{i}$ and $a_{i}$ are the home and the away team in the $i$-th match, home represents the home advantage and $\mu$ represents the constant intercept.
In order to achieve identifiability, we use sum-to-zero constraints for attacking and defensive abilities,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=1}^{n} a t t_{k}=0 \\
& \sum_{k=1}^{n} d e f_{\mathrm{k}}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

## Estimation

Considering the Poisson regression form,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \log \left(\lambda_{1 i}\right)=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1}{ }^{T} w_{1 i} \\
& \log \left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{2}{ }^{T} w_{2 i}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lambda_{1 i}, \lambda_{2 i}$ are the scoring rates of the home and away team respectively in the $i$ th match and $w_{1 i}, w_{2 i} \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ the respective vectors of covariates with $\beta_{1}{ }^{T}, \beta_{2}{ }^{T} \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ coefficients, the log-likelihood function is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\log L & =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[-\lambda_{1}-\lambda_{2}+x_{1 i} \log \left(\lambda_{1 i}\right)+x_{2 i} \log \left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)-\log \left(x_{i 1}!\right)-\log \left(x_{2 i}!\right)\right] \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left[-e^{\beta_{1}^{T} w_{1 i}}-e^{\beta_{2}^{T} w_{2 i}}+x_{1 i} \beta_{1}^{T} w_{1 i}+x_{2 i} \beta_{2}^{T} w_{2 i}-\log \left(x_{i 1}!\right)-\log \left(x_{2 i}!\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

The maximum likelihood estimation for parameters $w_{1 k}$ and $w_{2 k}$, $k=1, \ldots, d$ is carried out through the following equations:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{\partial \log L}{\partial \beta_{1 k}}=0, & \text { for } k=1, \ldots, d \\
\frac{\partial \log L}{\partial \beta_{2 k}}=0, & \text { for } k=1, \ldots, d
\end{array}
$$

For the solution of these equations the Newton-Raphson method is suggested which is presented in the Appendix. For this method, the matrix of second derivatives is needed.

### 4.1.3. The Negative Binomial model

Just like the Poisson case, a negative binomial model can be used for count data such as the number of goals for two opponents. In the world of football, empirical evidence has shown over the years that there is over-dispersion in the number of teams' goals in most leagues. An important characteristic of negative binomial distribution is that allows for over-dispersion as it has larger variance than the mean, something that can be seen as a disadvantage in Poisson distribution, where the mean is equal to the variance,.
The negative binomial distribution is a discrete probability distribution that models the number of successes in a sequence of independent and identically distributed Bernoulli trials before a specified number of failures (denoted r) occurs. Thus, the negative binomial mass function is derived as,

$$
f(k ; r, p)=P(X=k)=\binom{k+r-1}{r-1}(1-p)^{k} p^{r}, k=0,1,2, \ldots
$$

In our case, we have

$$
f\left(y_{i}\right)=\frac{\Gamma\left(y_{i}+r\right)}{\Gamma(r) \Gamma\left(y_{i}+1\right)}\left(\frac{r}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right)^{r}\left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right)^{y_{t}}
$$

where $\Gamma$ is the gamma distribution, $\lambda_{i}$ denotes the scoring rate of team $i$.
By obtaining the exponential dispersion form,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f\left(y_{i} ; \theta_{i} ; \varphi\right)==\exp \left(\log \left(\left(\frac{r}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right)^{r}\right)+y_{i} \log \left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right)+\log \left(\frac{\Gamma\left(y_{i}+r\right)}{\Gamma(r) \Gamma\left(y_{i}+1\right)}\right)\right) \Rightarrow \\
& a(\varphi)=1, \quad \theta_{i}=\log \left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right), \quad b\left(\theta_{i}\right)=-r \log \left(\frac{r}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right), \\
& c\left(y_{i}, \varphi\right)=\log \left(\frac{\Gamma\left(y_{i}+r\right)}{\Gamma(r) \Gamma\left(y_{i}+1\right)}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

As a result, the expected value and the variance in the negative binomial case can be retrieved by the following procedure:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\theta_{i}=\log \left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right) \Leftrightarrow \frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}=e^{\theta_{i}} \Rightarrow \lambda_{i}=\frac{r e^{\theta_{i}}}{1-e^{\theta_{i}}} \\
b\left(\theta_{i}\right)=-r \log \left(\frac{r}{r+\lambda_{i}}\right)=-r \log \left(1-e^{\theta_{i}}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

So it is,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}\left[Y_{i}\right]=b^{\prime}\left(\theta_{i}\right)=\frac{r e^{\theta_{i}}}{1-e^{\theta_{i}}}=\lambda_{i} \\
\operatorname{Var}\left[Y_{i}\right]=b^{\prime \prime}\left(\theta_{i}\right) a(\varphi)=\frac{r e^{\theta_{i}}}{\left(1-e^{\theta_{i}}\right)^{2}}=\lambda_{i}+\frac{1}{r} \lambda_{i}^{2}
\end{gathered}
$$

For $r \rightarrow \infty$ we can see that we get a Poisson model. As for the link function in the negative binomial case we have $g\left(\lambda_{i}\right)=\theta_{i}=$ $\log \left(\frac{\lambda_{i}}{\lambda_{i}+r}\right)=x_{i} \beta$.
Since $\lambda_{i}>0$ the image of $g\left(\lambda_{i}\right) \in(-\infty, 0)$. Therefore, the canonical link function is not a good choice. On the other side a log-link function (similarly to the case of Poisson model) is a better choice as it allows for positive values.
So, similarly to the Double Poisson model we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \log \left(\lambda_{1, i}\right)=\alpha+\beta_{1} a t t_{h, i}+\beta_{2} \text { def }_{g, i} \\
& \log \left(\lambda_{2, i}\right)=\alpha+\beta_{1} a t t_{g, i}+\beta_{2} \text { def }_{h, i}
\end{aligned}
$$

where att and def are the attack and defense parameters, $h$ and $g$ are the indicators of the home and the guest team respectively, $i$ is the number of our observation-game and $a$ is a constant parameter. The estimation of the parameters is similar to the Double Poisson model (paragraph 4.1.2.).

The models that were presented above are simple and easy-to-use. However they do not have some important properties that we need in studying football results. Dependence between the opponents, excess of some specific outcomes and dynamic abilities are some specifications that need to be taken into consideration as they play an important role in the quality of our model we use.

### 4.2. Models with dependence parameter

We saw some simple approaches in studying football results which do not contain dependence between the random variables. However, several researchers have shown the existence of a correlation between the numbers of goals scored by the two opponents. In team sports, such us football, it is reasonable to consider that the two random variables are correlated (either positively or negatively) as the two teams interact during the game. For example, if a team loses during a game, then it will try to score as soon as possible which affects the speed of the game as well as the rate of the chances of the opponent too. On the other hand, when a team has a totally offensive style of playing making many chances, this may affect negatively the net scoring of the opponent team which may only defend during the game. In this paragraph we will present models that contain dependence between the outcome variables.

### 4.2.1. Two-dimensional copula model

Copulas are very fashionable multivariate distributions contributing in application to many disciplines, like biostatistics, finance etc. Thus, one way to study football outcomes and insert a correlation between the two opponents is a two-dimensional copula. Two-dimensional copulas can produce flexible bivariate distributions with flexible marginal distributions and flexible dependence structure.
In our case, we want to predict the outcome in football games with the goal scoring of each team being a discrete random variable. As it is mentioned in Chapter 1, there are specific types of copulas dealing with discrete cases.
Provided that between the two opponents in a football match there is not only positive but also negative correlation, the Frank copula is a reasonable choice as $\theta \in(-\infty,+\infty) \backslash\{0\}$. So it is,

$$
C\left(u_{1}, u_{2} \mid \theta\right)=\frac{1}{\theta} \log \left\{1+\frac{\left(e^{-\theta u_{1}}-1\right)\left(e^{-\theta u_{2}}-1\right)}{e^{-\theta}-1}, \quad \theta \in \mathbb{R} \backslash\{0\}\right.
$$

If we consider $F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)$ the cumulative distribution functions for the number of goals of the home and the away team respectively, our copula is expressed as follows:

$$
C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y) \mid \theta\right)=\frac{1}{\theta} \log \left\{1+\frac{\left(e^{-\theta F_{X}(x)}-1\right)\left(e^{-\theta F_{Y}(y)}-1\right)}{e^{-\theta}-1}\right.
$$

with $\theta \in \mathbb{R} \backslash\{0\}$.

- In the Poisson case, we have,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& u_{1}=F_{X}(x)=P(X \leq x)=\sum_{k=0}^{x} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{k} e^{-\lambda_{1} x}}{k!} \\
& u_{2}=F_{Y}(y)=P(Y \leq y)=\sum_{k=0}^{y} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{k} e^{-\lambda_{2} y}}{k!}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ denote the rate of scoring of the home and the away team respectively.

- In the negative binomial case,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& u_{1}=F_{X}(x)=P(X \leq x)=\sum_{k=0}^{x} \frac{\Gamma(k+r)}{\Gamma(r) \Gamma(k+1)}\left(\frac{r}{\lambda_{1}+r}\right)^{r}\left(\frac{\lambda_{1}}{\lambda_{1}+r}\right)^{k} \\
& u_{2}=F_{Y}(y)=P(Y \leq y)=\sum_{k=0}^{y} \frac{\Gamma(k+r)}{\Gamma(r) \Gamma(k+1)}\left(\frac{r}{\lambda_{2}+r}\right)^{r}\left(\frac{\lambda_{2}}{\lambda_{2}+r}\right)^{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ denote the rate of scoring of the home and the away team respectively.
Since the copula function is actually the cumulative distribution function (cdf) and not the joint probability mass function (pmf), the probabilities of specific outcomes can be retrieved as follows:

- $P(X=0, Y=0)=C\left(F_{X}(0), F_{Y}(0)\right)$
- $P(X=x, Y=0)=C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(0)\right)-C\left(F_{X}(x-1), F_{Y}(0)\right), x=1,2, \ldots$
- $P(X=0, Y=y)=C\left(F_{X}(0), F_{Y}(y)\right)-C\left(F_{X}(0), F_{Y}(y-1)\right), y=1,2, \ldots$
- $P(X=x, Y=y)=C\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y)\right)-C\left(F_{X}(x-1), F_{Y}(y)\right)-$

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\left(F_{X}(x), F_{Y}(y-1)\right)+C\left(F_{X}(x-1), F_{Y}(y-1)\right) \\
x, y=1,2, \ldots
\end{array}
$$

## Dependence parameter $\theta$

As it is mentioned, the dependence parameter $\theta$ in the Frank copula allows for negative correlation between the home goals and the away goals which is appropriate, since historic data suggests this. Moreover, in our case, the dependence parameter is not the Pearson type of correlation in which the interval of $\theta$ would be $[-1,1]$. Kendall's $\tau$ is a measure of correlation-concordance that works in our case. For the Frank copula, Kendall's $\tau$ can be expressed as follows:

$$
\tau=f(\theta)=1+\frac{4}{\theta}\left[\int_{0}^{\theta} \frac{\alpha}{\theta\left(e^{\alpha}-1\right)} d \alpha-1\right]
$$

Since the function $f$ is invertible, $\theta$ can be easily estimated using an estimate of Kendall's $\tau$. So it is

$$
\tau=f(\theta) \Leftrightarrow \theta=f^{-1}(\tau)
$$

where $\tau$ is a Kendall's estimate. It is noticeable that $\theta$ can be estimated through $\tau$.

## Estimation

Assume that we have a set of $n$ observed match results,

$$
\left(x_{11}, x_{21}\right),\left(x_{12}, x_{22}\right), \ldots,\left(x_{1 n}, x_{2 n}\right)
$$

where $x_{1 i}$ and $x_{2 i}$ are the number of goals scored by the home and the away team respectively in the $i$ th match, and that we also have corresponding explanatory varialbles-vectors $w_{1 i}, w_{2 i}$ for each match.

The log-likelihood of the model is,

$$
\ell(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \theta)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \log \left[h_{\theta}\left(x_{1 i}, x_{2 i}\right)\right] .
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ is a vector of coefficients. Concerning the function $h_{\theta}$ :

$$
\begin{array}{r}
h_{\theta}\left(x_{1 i}, x_{2 i}\right)=C_{\theta}\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1 i}\right), F_{2}\left(x_{2 i}\right)\right)-C_{\theta}\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1 i}-1\right), F_{2}\left(x_{2 i}\right)\right)- \\
C_{\theta}\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1 i}\right), F_{2}\left(x_{2 i}-1\right)\right)+C_{\theta}\left(F_{1}\left(x_{1 i}-1\right), F_{2}\left(x_{2 i}-1\right)\right), \\
x_{1 i}, x_{2 i}=1,2, \ldots
\end{array}
$$

where $F_{1}, F_{2}$ the marginal cumulative functions of the goals achieved by the home and the away team respectively.
The parameter estimates $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}$ and $\widehat{\theta}$ can be found by the maximum likelihood estimation as $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}, \widehat{\theta}=\operatorname{argmax}_{\boldsymbol{\beta}, \theta} \ell(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \theta)$.
In practice, the numerical computations required to find the maximum are very heavy. Instead we use inference for the margins to estimate the marginal parameters and copula parameters separately.

### 4.2.2. The bivariate Poisson model

In the paragraph 4.1.2 we presented the double Poisson approach on football modeling which is a simple approach consisting of two independent and Poisson distributed random variables. In this paragraph we will show the bivariate Poisson distribution which is an advanced Poisson-model version allowing also for dependence between the random variables. After all, as it is mentioned, in team sports like football, there is correlation between the two opponents during the game.

## The bivariate Poisson distribution

Consider three random variables $X_{1}, X_{2}, X_{3}$ which follow independent Poisson distributions with parameters $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}$ respectively. As we want to construct a bivariate model we will apply trivariate reduction. We create $X, Y$ such as,

$$
\begin{aligned}
X & =X_{1}+X_{3} \\
Y & =X_{2}+X_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

The random variables $X, Y$ follow jointly the bivariate Poisson distribution $B P\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right)$ with joint probability function $f_{B P}$,

$$
f_{B P}(x, y)=\exp \left\{-\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)\right\} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x}}{x!} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y}}{y!} \sum_{k=0}^{\min (x, y)}\binom{x}{k}\binom{y}{k} k!\left(\frac{\lambda_{3}}{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}\right)^{k} .
$$

This bivariate distribution allows for dependence between the random variables. As for the marginal distributions, it is obvious that:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
X \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right) & \text { with } & \mathbb{E}[X]=\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3} \\
Y \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right) & \text { with } & \mathbb{E}[Y]=\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}
\end{array}
$$

Moreover, $\operatorname{Cov}(X, Y)=\lambda_{3}$ which leads to the consideration that $\lambda_{3}$ is a measure of dependence between the two random variables. If $\lambda_{3}=$ 0 , then the two random variables are independent and the bivariate Poisson distribution reduces to the product of two independent Poisson distributions which is the double Poisson distribution that we presented in 4.1.2.
When using this bivariate Poisson distribution to model football outcomes, it is obvious that $X_{1}$ and $X_{2}$ denote the goals of the home and the away team respectively, with $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ reflecting the scoring rates of the two teams. The variable $X_{3}$ denotes the goals from common cause, so $\lambda_{3}$ reflects game conditions such as the stadium, the weather, the speed of the game etc.

## Estimation

In football modeling, we have to use realistic models where the parameters are expressed through covariates. In the case of the bivariate Poisson model, we have the regression form as follows:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(X_{i}, Y_{i}\right) \sim B P\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right), \\
\log \left(\lambda_{1 i}\right)=w_{1 i} \boldsymbol{\beta}_{1}, \\
\log \left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)=w_{2 i} \boldsymbol{\beta}_{2,}, \\
\log \left(\lambda_{3 i}\right)=w_{3 i} \boldsymbol{\beta}_{3},
\end{gathered}
$$

where $i=1, \ldots, n$ denotes $i$-th observation-match, $w_{k i}$ is a vector of explanatory variables for the $i$-th match used to model $\lambda_{k i}$ and $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{k}$ are the regression coefficients, $k=1,2,3$.
It is clear that the explanatory variables that are used to model each parameter $\lambda_{k i}, k=1,2,3, i=1, \ldots, n$, are different as each parameter may be influenced by different characteristics and variables. For that reason the estimation of the parameters cannot be accomplished straightforwardly. Thus, in order to obtain maximum likelihood estimates, we make use of the EM algorithm. To construct the EM algorithm for the bivariate Poisson regression model, we make use of the trivariate reduction. Suppose that for the $i$-th observation, $X_{1 i}, X_{2 i}, X_{3 i}$ represent the unobserved data, whereas $X_{i}=X_{1 i}+X_{3 i}$ and $Y_{i}=X_{2 i}+X_{3 i}$ are the observe data. Initially, we need to estimate the unobserved data through their conditional expectations and then fit the Poisson regression models to the pseudo-values obtained by the E- step. The complete data log-likelihood is given by

$$
L(\varphi)=-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} \lambda_{k i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} x_{k i} \log \left(\lambda_{k i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} \log \left(x_{k i}!\right),
$$

where $\varphi=\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1}^{\prime}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{2}^{\prime}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{3}^{\prime}\right)$.

The EM algorithm for the bivariate Poisson model is:
E-step: We calculate the conditional expected values of $X_{3 i}, i=$ $1, \ldots, n$ by using the current parameter values of $k$ iteration $\left(\varphi^{(k)}, \lambda_{1 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{2 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{3 i}^{(k)}\right):$
$s_{i}=\mathbb{E}\left[X_{3 i} \mid X_{i}, Y_{i}, \varphi^{(k)}\right)= \begin{cases}\lambda_{3 i}^{(k)} \cdot \frac{f_{B P}\left(x_{i}-1, y_{i}-1 \mid \lambda_{1 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{2 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{3 i}^{(k)}\right)}{f_{B P}\left(x_{i}, y_{i} \mid \lambda_{1 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{2 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{3 i}^{(k)}\right)}, \min \left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)>0 \\ 0 \quad, \min \left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)=0\end{cases}$
where $f_{B P}$ the mass function of the bivariate Poisson distribution.
M-step: We update the estimates:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\beta_{1}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}\left(x-s, W_{1}\right), \\
\beta_{2}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}\left(y-s, W_{2}\right), \\
\beta_{3}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}\left(s, W_{3}\right), \\
\lambda_{k i}^{(k+1)}=\exp \left(W_{k i}^{T} \hat{\beta}_{k}^{(k+1)}\right), k=1,2,3
\end{gathered}
$$

where $s=\left(s_{1}, \ldots, s_{n}\right)^{T}$ is the $n \times 1$ vector calculated in the E-step and $\hat{\beta}(x, W)$ are the maximum likelihood estimates of a Poisson model with response vector $x$ and W data matrix.

## Model specification

A simple regression form of the model above is :

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(X_{i}, Y_{i}\right) \sim B P\left(\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right) \\
\log \left(\lambda_{1 i}\right)=\mu+h o m e+a t t_{h_{i}}+d e f_{a_{i}} \\
\log \left(\lambda_{2 i}\right)=\mu+a t t_{a_{i}}+d e f_{h_{i}}
\end{gathered}
$$

For ease of interpretation we choose sum-to-zero constraints on the explanatory variables.

For the covariance parameter $\lambda_{3 i}$ we may assume the general form:

$$
\log \left(\lambda_{3 i}\right)=\beta_{0}+\gamma_{1} \beta_{h_{i}}^{\text {home }}+\gamma_{2} \beta_{a_{i}}^{\text {away }}+\gamma \boldsymbol{\beta} w_{i}
$$

where $\beta_{0}$ is a constant parameter, $\beta_{h_{i}}^{\text {home }}$ and $\beta_{a_{i}}^{\text {away }}$ are the parameters that depend on the home and the away team respectively, $w_{i}$ is a vector of covariates for the $i$-th match and $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ a vector of coefficients. The parameters $\gamma_{1}$ and $\gamma_{2}$ are dummy binary indicators taking values 0 or 1 as well as $\gamma$ is a parameter-vector that that takes also values 0 or 1 . These values of parameters $\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}$ and $\gamma$ depend on the model that we consider. Usually, we consider models with constant $\lambda_{3}$, that is $\gamma_{1}=\gamma_{2}=0$ and $\gamma=0$ which makes the models easier to use. However, using covariates on $\lambda_{3}$ helps us to have more insight on the influence of $\lambda_{3 i}$ in each observation $i$.

## The effect of $\lambda_{3}$ in draws



The figure above is an output presented by Karlis and Ntzoufras (2003) which shows the relative change in the probability of a draw for different values of the parameter $\lambda_{3}(0.05,0.10,0.15,0.20)$ when the two competing teams have marginal means equal to $\lambda_{1}=1$ and $\lambda_{2} \in[0.1,2]$ respectively.

### 4.2.3. The bivariate Conway-Maxwell Poisson model

The bivariate Poisson distribution is widely used for modeling bivariate count data. However, its marginal equi-dispersion may prove limiting in some cases such us football outcomes where, as it is mentioned, there is over-dispersion.
The bivariate Conway-Maxwell Poisson (COM-Poisson) distribution includes three bivariate discrete distributions: bivariate Poisson, bivariate Bernoulli, bivariate geometric. It also contains an added dispersion parameter and as a result, the bivariare COM-Poisson distribution deals with bivariate count data in the presence of data dispersion (over-dispersion or under-dispersion).
Before presenting the bivariate Conway-Maxwell Poisson distribution and its properties we will show the univariate case.

## Conway-Maxwell Poisson distribution

The COM-Poisson distribution was introduced by Conway and Maxwell and its mass function is,

$$
f(x ; \lambda, v)=P(X=x \mid \lambda, v)=\frac{\lambda^{x}}{(x!)^{v}} \frac{1}{Z(\lambda, v)}, \quad x \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda>0, v \geq 0
$$

where $Z(\lambda, v)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda^{k}}{(k!)^{v}}$ is the normalizing constant and $\lambda=\mathbb{E}\left[X^{v}\right]$.

The expected value and the variance of the COM-Poisson distribution are (Kimberly F. Sellers 2011) :

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}_{\lambda}[X]=\lambda \frac{\partial \ln Z(\lambda, v)}{\partial \lambda}=\frac{\partial \ln Z(\lambda, v)}{\partial \ln \lambda} \approx \lambda^{\frac{1}{v}}-\frac{v-1}{2 v} \\
\operatorname{Var}[X]=\frac{\partial \mathbb{E}_{\lambda}[X]}{\partial \ln \lambda} \approx \frac{1}{v} \lambda^{\frac{1}{v}}
\end{gathered}
$$

After all, $\frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda}=\frac{\partial \ln \lambda}{\partial \lambda} \frac{\partial}{\partial \ln \lambda}=\frac{1}{\lambda} \frac{\partial}{\partial \ln \lambda}$ and $\lambda \frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda}=\frac{\partial}{\partial \ln \lambda}$.

It is clear that $v \geq 0$ is a dispersion parameter such that $v=1$ denotes equi-dispersion, $v>1$ denotes under-dispersion and $v<1$ denotes overdispersion.

The COM-Poisson distribution is a generalization of well-known distributions:

1. If $v=1$ then $X \sim \operatorname{Poisson}(\lambda)$
2. If $v=0$ and $0<\lambda<1$, then $X \sim \operatorname{Geom}(1-\lambda)$
3. If $v \rightarrow \infty$ then $X \sim \operatorname{Bernoulli}\left(\frac{\lambda}{1+\lambda}\right)$

## The bivariate Conway-Maxwell Poisson distribution

Let us consider two random variables Xand $Y$ denoting the goals achieved by the home and the away team in a football game, which follow univariate COM-Poisson distribution of mass functions,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.P(X=x) \mid \lambda_{1}, v_{1}\right)=\frac{\lambda_{1}^{x}}{(x!)^{v_{1}}} \frac{1}{Z\left(\lambda_{1}, v_{1}\right)}, \quad x \in \mathbb{N}, \quad v_{1} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, \lambda_{1} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{*}, \\
& \left.P(Y=y) \mid \lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)=\frac{\lambda_{2}^{y}}{(y!)^{v_{2}}} \frac{1}{Z\left(\lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)}, \quad x \in \mathbb{N}, \quad v_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, \lambda_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{*}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ the respective scoring rates of the two teams.
The couple $(X, Y)$ follows the bivariate COM-Poisson distribution if and only if its mass function is,

$$
P\left(X=x, Y=y \mid \lambda_{1}, v_{1}, \lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)=\frac{\lambda_{1}^{x}}{(x!)^{v_{1}}} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y}}{(y!)^{v_{2}}} \frac{1}{Z\left(\lambda_{1}, v_{1}\right)} \frac{1}{Z\left(\lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)},
$$

where $x, y \in \mathbb{N}, v_{1}, v_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}, \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2} \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{*}$ under the conditions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \log \lambda_{1}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1} w \\
& \log \lambda_{2}=\boldsymbol{\beta}_{2} w+\boldsymbol{\eta} x
\end{aligned}
$$

where $w \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the vector of explanatory variables and $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{\mathbf{2}} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ are the vectors of coefficients.
From the last condition above, we notice that

$$
P\left(Y=y \mid \lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)=P(Y=y \mid X=x)
$$

As a result, it is,

$$
\left.P(X=x, Y=y) \mid \lambda_{1}, v_{1}, \lambda_{2}, v_{2}\right)=P\left(X=x \mid \lambda_{1}, v_{1}\right) \cdot P(Y=y \mid X=x)
$$

It is clear that $\boldsymbol{\eta}$ is a measure of dependence between the two random variables, which is actually introduced through the dependence of the model parameters. When $\boldsymbol{\eta}=0$ the variables $X$ and $Y$ are independent. After all, the covariance of $X$ and $Y$ in the bivariate COM-Poisson model is expressed as,

$$
\operatorname{COV}(X, Y)=\mathbb{E}_{\lambda_{1}}[X] \mathbb{E}_{\lambda_{2}}[Y]\left(e^{\boldsymbol{\eta}}-1\right)
$$

## Estimation

The estimation of the parameters $\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \eta$ takes place through the maximum likelihood estimation. The log-likelihood of the bivariate COM-Poisson distribution is expressed as,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \begin{aligned}
& \ell=\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{x_{i} \log \lambda_{1}+y_{i} \log \lambda_{2}-\widehat{v_{1}} \log \left(x_{i}!\right)-\widehat{v_{2}} \log \left(y_{i}!\right)-\log \sum_{x=0}^{\infty}\left[\frac{\lambda_{1}^{x_{i}}}{\left(x_{i}!\right)^{\widehat{v_{1}}}}\right]\right. \\
&\left.-\log \sum_{y=0}^{\infty}\left[\frac{\lambda_{1}^{y_{i}}}{\left(y_{i}!\right)^{\widehat{v}_{2}}}\right]\right\}= \\
&\left.\begin{array}{c}
\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\{x \boldsymbol{\beta}_{1} w\right.
\end{array}\right]+y\left(\boldsymbol{\beta}_{1} w+\eta x\right)-\widehat{v_{1}} \log (x!)-\widehat{v_{2}} \log (y!)-\log \sum_{x=0}^{\infty}\left[\frac{e^{x \boldsymbol{\beta}_{1} w}}{(x!)^{\widehat{v_{1}}}}\right] \\
&\left.-\log \sum_{y=0}^{\infty}\left[\frac{e^{y \boldsymbol{\beta}_{1} w+\eta x y}}{(y!)^{\widehat{v_{2}}}}\right]\right\}
\end{aligned}
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.3. Models with inflation

Many statistical models that are used to predict football outcomes often underestimate some particular scores such as $0-0,1-1$ etc. In order to deal with this underestimation, it is necessary to inflate the probability of these scores. Inflated models are a good choice to deal with this problem.

### 4.3.1. Diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model

The bivariate Poisson model (2.2.2) can explain quite properly a football game and its probable results. However, there is an underestimation in the "draw" results such as 0-0, 1-1, 2-2, 3-3, 4-4 etc. As a remedy to this occurrence, we may consider the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model. The latter is an extension of the simple zero-inflated model which allows for an excess only in ( 0,0 ) cell.
Considering that the starting model is the bivariate Poisson model, a diagonal inflated model is expressed as,

$$
f_{I B P}(x, y)= \begin{cases}(1-p) f_{B P}\left(x, y \mid \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right), & x \neq y \\ (1-p) f_{B P}\left(x, y \mid \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right)+p f_{D}(x ; \theta), & x=y\end{cases}
$$

where $D$ is a discrete distribution defined on the set $\{0,1,2,, \ldots\}$ with parameter $\theta$ and $p \in(0,1)$.

We notice that if $p=0$ we have the simple bivariate Poisson model.

## The distribution $\mathbf{D}(\boldsymbol{x} ; \boldsymbol{\theta})$

The distribution $D$ that we mentioned above could be Poisson, geometric or other simple discrete distributions denoted by $D(m)$. As $D(m)$ we consider the distribution with the following probability function:

$$
f(x \mid \theta, m)= \begin{cases}\theta_{x}, & x=0,1, \ldots, m \\ 0, & x \neq 0,1, \ldots, m\end{cases}
$$

where $\sum_{x=0}^{m} \theta_{x}=1$.
We notice that if $\mathrm{m}=0$ we have a zero-inflated model that inflates only the $0-0$ score. The geometric distribution might be of great interest as it decays quickly. After all, in football the most frequent draw results are 0-0 and 1-1 and, additionally, the more goals a draw outcome has, the less probable it is.

## The marginal distributions

The marginal distributions of $X$ and $Y$ of the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model are not Poisson distributions, but mixtures of distributions:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{I B P}(x)=(1-p) f_{\text {Poisson }}\left(x \mid \lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p f_{D}(x \mid \theta) \\
& f_{I B P}(y)=(1-p) f_{\text {Poisson }}\left(y \mid \lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p f_{D}(y \mid \theta)
\end{aligned}
$$

As a result, the marginal means are:

$$
\mathbb{E}[X]=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[X]
$$

and

$$
\mathbb{E}[Y]=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[Y]
$$

where $\mathbb{E}_{D}[X]$ denotes the expected value of the distribution $D$.

As for the variance, we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Var}[X]= & (1-p)\left\{\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)^{2}+\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)\right\}+p \mathbb{E}_{D}\left[X^{2}\right] \\
& -\left\{(1-p)\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p E_{D}[X]\right\}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Var}[Y]= & (1-p)\left\{\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)^{2}+\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)\right\}+p \mathbb{E}_{D}\left[Y^{2}\right] \\
& -\left\{(1-p)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p E_{D}[Y]\right\}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since the marginal distributions are not Poisson distributions, they can be either under-dispersed or over-dispersed. It depends on the distribution $D$.

## Correlation

In general, in the simple bivariate Poisson model, it is $\mathbb{E}_{B P}[X Y]=\lambda_{3}+$ $\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)$. So, in the case of the respective inflated model we have,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{COV}_{I B P}(X, Y) & \\
& =(1-p)\left\{\lambda_{3}+\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)\right\}+p \mathbb{E}_{D}\left(X^{2}\right) \\
& -(1-p)^{2}\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right) \\
& -(1-p) p \mathbb{E}_{D}(X)\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+2 \lambda_{3}\right)-p^{2}\left\{\mathbb{E}_{D}[X]\right\}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

We note that the covariance can either positive or negative depending on the choice of distribution $D$.

We conclude that, except for inflating the draw results, the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model also allows for over-dispersion as well as negative correlation in contrast with the simple bivariate Poisson model. These characteristics are necessary when modeling football results. However, the inflated model may sometimes be more difficult in computations than the simple Poisson model.

## Estimation

Similarly to the simple bivariate Poisson distribution the estimation of the parameters will take place through the EM algorithm. In the diagonal inflated case of the bivariate Poisson model, the complete data log-likelihood takes the form,

$$
\begin{aligned}
L(\varphi, p, \theta)= & \sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}\left\{\log (p)+\log f_{D}\left(x_{i} ; \theta\right)\right\} \\
& +\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(1-u_{i}\right)\{\log (1-p) \\
& \left.-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} \lambda_{k i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} x_{k i} \log \left(\lambda_{k i}\right)-\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{3} \log \left(x_{k i}!\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $u_{i}$ take values 1 or 0 depending on whether the observation comes from the inflation or the basic component. At the E-step $u_{i}$ have to be estimated through their conditional expectations.

The EM algorithm for the diagonal inflated model is expressed as follows:

E-step: (a) We calculate the conditional expected values of the latent binary variable $V_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$ by using the current parameter values of $k$ iteration $\left(\varphi^{(k)}, \lambda_{1 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{2 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{3 i}^{(k)}, p^{(k)}, \theta^{(k)}\right)$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_{i}=\mathbb{E}\left[V_{i} \mid X\right. & \left.=X_{i}, Y=Y_{i}, \varphi^{(k)}, p^{(k)}, \theta^{(k)}\right) \\
& = \begin{cases}\frac{p^{(k)} f_{D}\left(x_{i} \mid \theta^{(k)}\right)}{p^{(k)} f_{D}\left(x_{i} \mid \theta^{(k)}\right)+\left(1-p^{(k)}\right) f_{B P}\left(x_{i}, y_{i} \mid \lambda_{1 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{2 i}^{(k)}, \lambda_{3 i}^{(k)}\right)} & , x_{i}=y_{i} \\
0 & , x_{i} \neq \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{i}}\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $f_{D}$ the mass function of the inflation distribution with parameter vecror $\theta$.
(b) Similarly to the occasion of the simple bivariate Poisson model, for $i=1, \ldots, n$ we calculate $s_{i}$.

M-step: We update the estimates:

$$
\begin{gathered}
p^{(k+1)}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}, \\
\beta_{1}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}_{\tilde{u}}\left(x-s, W_{1}\right), \\
\beta_{2}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}_{\widetilde{u}}\left(y-s, W_{2}\right), \\
\beta_{3}^{(k+1)}=\hat{\beta}_{\tilde{u}}\left(s, W_{3}\right), \\
\theta^{(k+1)}=\hat{\theta}_{u, D}, \\
\lambda_{k i}^{(k+1)}=\exp \left(W_{k i}^{T} \hat{\beta}_{k}^{(k+1)}\right), k=1,2,3
\end{gathered}
$$

where $x, y, s, u, \tilde{u}=1-u$ are $n \times 1$ vectors, $\hat{\beta}_{u}(x, W)$ are the weighted maximum likelihood estimates $\beta$ of a Poisson regression model with response $x$ and data matrix $W$, and $\hat{\theta}_{u, D}(x, W)$ are the weighted maximum likelihood estimates of $\theta$ for the distribution $D(x ; \theta)$.

For specific choices of the inflation distribution that are used in the application of this dissertation :

- Geometric distribution

The parameter $\theta$ is updated by,

$$
\theta^{(k+1)}=\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}}{\sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i} x_{i}+\sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}}
$$

- Discrete distribution with $j=J$

The model parameters of the general occasion are given by,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\theta_{j}=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} u_{i}\right)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} I\left(X_{i}=Y_{i}=j\right) u_{i}, j=1, \ldots, J \\
\theta_{0}=1-\sum_{j=1}^{J} \theta_{j}
\end{gathered}
$$

where $I(x)$ indicator function. In the case of the inflation in the up to $(1,1)$ cell we put $J=1$.

### 4.3.2. Dixon and Coles model

Dixon and Coles model is another type of inflated model. In contrast with the case of the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model which inflates the probability of the draw results, the Dixon and Coles model accounts for the excessive number of particular scores. In other words, there is inflation on the probability of the specific outcomes $0-0,1-0,0-1,1-1$ which are frequent football results.

Considering $X \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{1}\right)$ and $Y \sim \operatorname{Poisson}\left(\lambda_{2}\right)$ the Dixon and Coles mass function of $X, Y$ is expressed as,

$$
f_{D C}(x, y)=P(X=x, Y=y)=\tau_{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}(x, y) \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x} \exp \left(-\lambda_{1}\right)}{x!} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y} \exp \left(-\lambda_{2}\right)}{y!}
$$

where $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ are the scoring rates of the home and the away team respectively and $\tau$ is a function that moves the probability of certain scores as follows:

$$
\tau_{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}(x, y)=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
1-\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2} \rho, & \text { if } x=y=0 \\
1+\lambda_{1} \rho, & \text { if } x=0, y=1 \\
1+\lambda_{2} \rho, & \text { if } x=1, y=0 \\
1-\rho, & \text { if } x=y=1 \\
1, & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\rho$ is a dependence parameter which satisfies the constraint:

$$
\max \left(-\frac{1}{\lambda_{1}},-\frac{1}{\lambda_{2}}\right) \leq \rho \leq \min \left(\frac{1}{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}, 1\right)
$$

If $\rho=0$ then the two random variables $X, Y$ are independent to each other.

The Dixon and Coles marginal distributions of $X$ and $Y$ are still Poisson with parameters $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ respectively.

## Model Inference

Considering that we have $n$ teams with attack parameters $\left\{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n}\right\}$ and defense parameters $\left\{d_{1}, \ldots, d_{n}\right\}$ as well as a home parameter $h$, we want to estimate $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ of the home and the away team. To prevent the model from being over-parameterized we have the following constraints,

$$
n^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i}=1 \quad \text { and } \quad n^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} d_{i}=1
$$

The basic tool of inference is the likelihood function. For $N$ matches and score $\left(x_{k}, y_{k}\right)$ in the $k$ th match $, k=1, \ldots, N$, the likelihood is expressed as,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L\left(\alpha_{i}, d_{i}, \rho, \gamma ; i=1, \ldots, n\right) \\
& \quad=\prod_{k=1}^{N} \tau_{\lambda_{1 k} \lambda_{2 k}}\left(x_{k}, y_{k}\right) \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x_{k}} \exp \left(-\lambda_{1 k}\right)}{x_{k}!} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y_{k}} \exp \left(-\lambda_{2 k}\right)}{y_{k}!}
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda_{1 k}=a_{i}(k) d_{j}(k) h, \\
\lambda_{2 k}=a_{j}(k) d_{i}(k)
\end{gathered}
$$

and $i(k)$ and $j(k)$ denote respectively the indices of the home and the away team playing in the $k$ th match.
Despite the high dimensionality of the model, the maximization of the likelihood can be carried out straightforwardly through direct numerical computations.

### 4.4. Dynamic Models

All the models that we mentioned in the previous paragraphs are quite easy to use and they assume static team parameters. In other words, a team's performance determined by attack and defense abilities, remains unchanged across time. Although this makes our modeling and estimation easy, it sometimes contradicts the reality. That is a team's performance tends to be dynamic and changes across years, months or even weeks. Many factors may affect this performance such as roster changing, injuries, coaching staff changing, economic situations etc. For example, if an excellent scorer leaves a team, the offensive strength will certainly decrease. In the next paragraphs we will present dynamic extensions of some bivariate models that are already mentioned in the previous paragraphs.

### 4.4.1. Dixon and Coles dynamic model

We have already presented the Dixon and Coles bivariate model in paragraph 4.3.2, for which we have the likelihood,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L\left(a_{i}, d_{i}, \rho, h ; i=1, \ldots, n\right)= \\
& \quad=\prod_{k=1}^{N} \tau_{\lambda_{1 k} \lambda_{2 k}}\left(x_{k}, y_{k}\right) \exp \left(-\lambda_{1 k}\right) \lambda_{1 k}^{x_{k}} \exp \left(-\lambda_{2 k}\right) \lambda_{2 k}^{y_{k}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $N$ the number of matches, $\lambda_{1 k}, \lambda_{2 k}$ the scoring rates of the two opponents in the $k^{\text {th }}$ match and $\rho$ the dependence parameter. The parameters $\lambda_{1 k}, \lambda_{2 k}$ depend on $a_{i}, d_{i, h}$ which are the attack parameters of the $i^{\text {th }}$ team, the defense parameters of the $i^{\text {th }}$ team and the home effect parameter respectively.

Since the parameters $a_{i}, d_{i}$ remain static over time, the model written above can be enhanced by introducing a 'pseudo-likelihood' for each time point $t$. So it is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L\left(a_{i}, d_{i}, \rho, h ; i=1, \ldots, n\right)= \\
& =\prod_{k \in A_{t}}\left\{\tau_{\lambda_{1 k} \lambda_{2 k}}\left(x_{k}, y_{k}\right) \exp \left(-\lambda_{1 k}\right) \lambda_{1 k}^{x_{k}} \exp \left(-\lambda_{2 k}\right) \lambda_{2 k}^{y_{k}}\right\}^{\varphi\left(t-t_{k}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $t_{k}$ is the time that match $k$ occurs, $A_{t}=\left\{k: t_{k}<t\right\}$ and $\varphi$ is a non-increasing function of time. As for $\lambda_{1 k}, \lambda_{2 k}$ we have (similarly to the non-dynamic model),

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda_{1 k}=a_{i}(k) d_{j}(k) h, \\
\lambda_{2 k}=a_{j}(k) d_{i}(k)
\end{gathered}
$$

It is clear that the parameters $a_{i}, d_{i}, \rho, h$ are themselves timedependent. Maximizing the equation above at time $t$, we estimate the parameters only up to time $t$ and that is how the model reflects on changes in teams' performance.

## Weighting function $\varphi$

The choice of the function $\varphi$ depends on the way we want the weight of the historical data to decrease over time. One choice is,

$$
\varphi(t)= \begin{cases}1 & , t \leq t_{0} \\ 0 & , t>t_{0}\end{cases}
$$

where all the results within the last time units since $t_{0}$ will be given equal weight in the inference whereas the results before $t_{0}$ won't be taken into consideration.

Another choice of the function $\varphi$ could be,

$$
\varphi(t)=\exp (-\xi t),
$$

where the effect of all the previous results decreases exponentially over time according to the nonnegative parameter $\xi$. It is clear that if $\xi=0$ then we end up with the initial static form. On the other hand, if $\xi$ take large values, then there will be more weight to the most recent results. This last choice is the one that Dixon and Coles dynamic model uses.

Quite often, our basic aim is to predict the winner of a football match and not the exact score. It is remarkable that the probability of a home win, an away win and a draw in the $k^{\text {th }}$ match are respectively estimated as,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& p_{k}^{H}=\sum_{i>j} P(X=i, Y=j) \\
& p_{k}^{A}=\sum_{i<j} P(X=i, Y=j) \\
& p_{k}^{D}=\sum_{i=j} P(X=i, Y=j)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we define,

$$
S(\xi)=\sum_{k=1}^{N}\left(\delta_{k}^{H} \log p_{k}^{H}+\delta_{k}^{A} \log p_{k}^{A}+\delta_{k}^{D} \log p_{k}^{D}\right)
$$

where $\delta_{k}^{H}, \delta_{k}^{A}, \delta_{k}^{D}$ take values 0 or 1 depending on the outcome we had in the $k^{\text {th }}$ game. For instance, if the home team wins, then $\delta_{k}^{H}=$ $1, \delta_{k}^{A}=0$ and $\delta_{k}^{D}=0$. The probabilities $p_{k}^{H}, p_{k}^{A}, p_{k}^{D}$ are the maximum likelihood estimates of $L\left(a_{i}, d_{i}, \rho, h, \xi ; i=1, \ldots, n\right)$ and $\xi$ is a weighting parameter. The parameter $\xi$ plays an important role in the predictive capability of our model. Before defining the function $S$, the optimal choice of $\xi$ wasn't feasible since the equation of our 'pseudolikelihood' contained a sequence of dependent likelihoods. Therefore, our aim is to find the value of $\xi$ that maximizes the function $S$.

### 4.4.2. Koopman and Lit model

All the statistic models that are used to predict football outcomes can be extended to dynamic. Koopman and Lit model is an extension with dynamic approach of the bivariate Poisson model that we presented in 4.2.2 paragraph. In this model the result of the outcome of the $i^{\text {th }}$ football match is taken as the pair $(X, Y)$ with probability density function

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{B P}\left(x, y ; \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}\right)= \\
& \quad=\exp \left\{-\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)\right\} \frac{\lambda_{1}^{x}}{x!} \frac{\lambda_{2}^{y}}{y!} \sum_{k=0}^{\min (x, y)}\binom{x}{k}\binom{y}{k} k!\left(\frac{\lambda_{3}}{\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}}\right)^{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

with

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathbb{E}[X]=\operatorname{Var}[X]=\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}, \\
\mathbb{E}[Y]=\operatorname{Var}[Y]=\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3} \\
\operatorname{COV}(X, Y)=\lambda_{3}
\end{gathered}
$$

## Dynamic specification

The scoring rate of the two opponent teams in a football match is determined by $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}$. Each team in a championship has its own scoring rate. In the dynamic case, we consider these rates to change over time since the performance of teams will change over time.

The scoring intensity of the team $i$ when playing against the team $j$ is considered to depend on the attack ability of the team $i$ and the defense ability of team $j$. The home advantage is also included in our model, so considering that $i$ is the home team and $j$ the away team in week $t$ we have for $i, j=1, \ldots, N, i \neq j$,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda_{1(i, j) t}=\exp \left(h o m e+a t t_{i t}+d e f_{j t}\right) \\
\lambda_{2(i, j) t}=\exp \left(a t t_{j t}+d e f_{i t}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

The attack and defense strengths of the teams in a championship change over time since the teams' compositions and performances are not the same over time. As a result, we consider the attack and defense parameters to be auto-regressive processes. We have,

$$
\begin{gathered}
a t t_{i, t}=\mu_{a t t, i}+\varphi_{a t t, i} a t t_{i, t-1}+\eta_{a t t, i t} \\
d e f_{i, t}=\mu_{d e f, i}+\varphi_{d e f, i} d e f_{i, t-1}+\eta_{d e f, i t}
\end{gathered}
$$

where $\mu_{\text {att }, i}$ and $\mu_{d e f, i}$ are unknown constants, $\varphi_{a t t, i}$ and $\varphi_{d e f, i}$ are auto-regressive coefficients and $\eta_{\text {att,it }}$ and $\eta_{\text {def,it }}$ are normally distributed error terms which are independent of each other for all $i=1, \ldots, N$ and $t=1, \ldots, n$.

The dynamic processes are considered to be stationary, so $\left|\varphi_{a t t, i}\right|<$ 1 and $\left|\varphi_{\text {def }, i}\right|<1$ for $i=1, \ldots, N$. We also have that,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\eta_{\text {att }, i t} \sim N I D\left(0, \sigma_{a t t, i}^{2}\right) \\
\eta_{\text {def }, i t} \sim N I D\left(0, \sigma_{d e f, i}^{2}\right)
\end{gathered}
$$

where $\operatorname{NID}(a, b)$ is normal independent distribution with mean $a$ and variance $b$.

The initial conditions for the auto-regressive processes att $t_{i, t}, d e f_{i, t}$ are based on means and variances of their unconditional distributions which are given by,

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[a t t_{i, t}\right]=\frac{\mu_{a t t, i}}{1-\varphi_{a t t, i}}, \operatorname{Var}\left[a t t_{i, t}\right]=\frac{\sigma_{a t t, i}^{2}}{\left(1-\varphi_{a t t, i}\right)^{2}}
$$

and

$$
\mathbb{E}\left[d e f_{i, t}\right]=\frac{\mu_{d e f, i}}{1-\varphi_{d e f, i}}, \operatorname{Var}\left[\operatorname{def}_{i, t}\right]=\frac{\sigma_{d e f, i}^{2}}{\left(1-\varphi_{d e f, i}\right)^{2}}
$$

## Estimation

Considering $J$ teams, we have $J / 2$ match results for each week $t$. A specific match result is denoted by ( $X_{i t}, Y_{j t}$ ) with $i \neq j$ and $i, j \in$ $\{1, \ldots, J\}$. The numbers of goals scored by all teams in week $t$ are collected in the $J \times 1$ observation vector $y_{t}$. We also assume the state vector $z_{t}$ which contains the strengths of attack and defense of all $J$ teams at time $t,\left(a t t_{1 t}, \ldots, a t t_{J t}, d e f_{1 t}, \ldots, d e f_{J t}\right)^{\mathrm{T}}$ with,

$$
z_{t}=\mu+\Phi z_{t-1}+\eta_{t}
$$

where $\mu$ is a constant $2 J \times 1$ vector, $\Phi$ is the auto-regressive $2 J \times 2 J$ coefficient matrix and $\eta_{t} \sim N(0, H)$ is the $2 J \times 1$ disturbance vector. Let $\varphi=\operatorname{diag} \Phi$ and $h=\operatorname{diag} H$. The observation density of $y_{t}$ for a given realization of $z_{t}$ is given by

$$
p\left(y_{t} \mid z_{t} ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right)=\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{J}{2}} f_{B P}\left(\lambda_{1, i, j, t}, \lambda_{2, i, j, t}, \lambda_{3}\right)
$$

where $f_{B P}$ the density of the bivariate Poisson distribution, index $k$ represents the $k$ th match between home team $i$ and visiting team $j$ and $\quad \lambda_{1, i, j, t}=\exp \left\{h o m e+w_{i j} z_{t}\right\}, \quad \lambda_{2, i, j, t}=\exp \left\{w_{j i} z_{t}\right\}, i \neq j$. The vector $w_{i j}$ selects the appropriate $a_{i t}, \beta_{j t}$ elements from $z_{t}$. The joint density $(y, z)$ is expressed as,

$$
p\left(y, z ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right)=p\left(y \mid z ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right) \cdot p\left(z ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right)
$$

where

$$
p\left(z ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right)=p\left(z_{1} ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right) \prod_{t=2}^{n} p\left(z_{t} \mid z_{1}, \ldots, z_{t-1} ; \varphi, h, \text { home }, \lambda_{3}\right)
$$

Therefore the likelihood function of $y$ is,

$$
l(\psi)=p(y ; \psi)=\int p(y, z ; \psi) d z=\int p(y \mid z ; \psi) p(z ; \psi) d z
$$

with $\psi=\left(\varphi, h\right.$, home,$\left.\lambda_{3}\right)$
An analytical solution to evaluate this integral is not feasible, so the maximum likelihood estimation is carried out through numerical evaluation methods.

## Chapter 5

## Application

In this chapter, four models will be used in terms of an application over football analysis and prediction. Initially, the aim of the application will be presented along with the data. Subsequently, the models' fitting will take place along with comparison of the models. At the end, prediction on a playoff match will be carried out. The Rcode of the procedure as well as the whole dataset will be given in the Appendix.

### 5.1. Analyzing the Greek Superleague

The application that follows, concerns the Greek Superleague. Our basic aim is to analyze the teams' performance by estimating the "expected goals" for each team in every match of the season 20192020 and the regular season 2020-2021. The analysis will take place through four models: the bivariate Poisson model, the bivariate Poisson model with geometric diagonal inflation, the bivariate Poisson model with inflation at scores $0-0$ and $1-1$, and the diagonal inflated Double Poisson model.

### 5.1.1. Model specification

The basic aim of a statistician when using a model, is the estimation of the parameters of the model.

The bivariate Poisson models that were presented in Chapter 4, are said to use the number of goals that a team succeeds or concedes as covariates for the estimation of the model parameters. However, as it is pointed out by Wheatcroft (2020), the match statistics such as shots and corner kicks might be more informative than goals in terms of making match predictions.

## Covariates for scoring rates $\boldsymbol{\lambda}_{1}, \boldsymbol{\lambda}_{2}$

In our application, the predictors that will be used for the scoring rates of the two opponents are:

1) Overall Rating: The overall team rating is a reasonable choicepredictor for the model as it depicts completely the quality of a team's performance in a football game (Hongyou Liu, 2015). The football performance analysts evaluate the performance of each player in a single match every 5 minutes. If a player makes a successful pass or cross or a good penetration in the opponent's area then the player will gain points. On the other hand, if a player makes a mistake then he will lose points. As a result, every 5-minutes, a total rating for each player is computed, which is positive or negative depending on whether the good actions are more than the bad ones or not. Table 1 below shows the evaluation points for the match Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos in the season 2020-2021. At the end of the match, each player has his total evaluation points and by calculating the sum of all players' points the team total evaluation points are obtained.


| 1 E. $\triangle$ IOY $\triangle$ Hz |  | 5. | 3.0 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 3.0 |  |  |  | 3.01 |  | 14.0 |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 14 Ф. zantzes | -1.5 |  |  |  |  | -2.5 | 1.0 | 0.5 | 1.01 | 0.5 | -1.0\| | \|-1.0| | -0.5 | -1.0 |  |  |  |  | 0.51 | -4.0 | 971 | 0.144 |  | - - |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | -0.041 |  |  |
| 24 Ө.MAYPOMMATH: | -1.0\| |  | \|-1.0| | 0.5 | 1.01 |  | 1.0 | 2.01 | -0.5\| |  | 2.01 |  |  |  |  | 1.01 |  |  |  | 5.0 | $86^{\prime}$ | 0.058 |  |  |
| 4 Ф. BEnee | 3.01 | $1.0 \mid$ | 3.01 | 2.01 | 1.01 |  |  | -1.0\| | 4.51 | -1.0\| |  |  | 1.01 |  |  | 1.01 | 1.01 | -1.01 |  | 13.5 | 971 | 0.139 |  |  |
| 44 A. HOYtTOYPAz | 1.01 | 1.0 | 4.01 | 3.01 |  | 0.51 |  |  | 1.01 | 1.0 | 1.01 |  | 0.51 | 1.01 | -1.0 | 1.01 | 1.01 | -2.5\| |  | 12.5 | 971 | 0.129 |  |  |
| 21 А. KOYPMIEAHz | 1.0 |  | 3.0 | 2.0 |  | 2.0 | 0.5 | 1.0 |  | 3.0 | 0.5 | -1.0 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 12.0 | $70^{\prime}$ | 0.171 |  |  |
| 20 -. EEPIEZH2 | 1.0 |  |  | 1.5 | 4.0 |  | -1.0 | 1.0 |  | -0.5 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 6.0 | $60^{\prime}$ | 0.100 |  |  |
| 8 Г.AГIOYMI | 1.51 | -1.0\| | -0.5 | 2.01 | -0.5 | 2.51 | -0.5\| | -1.0) | -3.5 | 4.01 | 1.0 | 1.0 | 1.0 |  | -0.5 | 1.0 | 1.01 |  |  | 8.0 | 97 ' | 0.082 | - - - |  |
| 7 A. EABIEP | 0.51 |  | \|-2.0| | 2.01 | -1.5\| | 4.01 |  | $1.0 \mid$ |  | -1.0\| |  |  | 2.51 | -1.0\| |  |  |  |  |  | 4.5 | 71 ' | 0.063 | -- | $\square$ |
| 9 Ф.MAKENTA | 2.01 | \|-1.0| | 1.01 | 2.01 | $1.0 \mid$ |  | 1.0 | 0.51 |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | -1.0\| |  | 0.51 |  | 6.0 | $97^{\prime}$ | 0.062 | - |  |
| 10 . KAPMITOE | -1.0\| | 1.01 | 2.01 | 3.01 |  | 1.0 | 1.0 |  | -1.0\| | 2.01 | \|-1.0| |  | -3.0\| | 3.01 |  | $1.0 \mid$ |  |  | 1.01 | 9.0 | 971 | 0.093 | - | -- |
| 15 B.zENOHOYMOE |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 0.0 | $0^{\prime}$ | 0.000 |  |  |
| 11 A. XATZHTIOBANHZ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 2.01 | \|-0.5| |  |  | 1.5 | $26^{\prime}$ | 0.058 |  |  |
| 18 T.MnOYZOYKHZ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | $1.0 \mid$ | 6.0 | 1.0 |  | 1.0 | 1.01 |  | 1.01 | 11.0 | $37^{\prime}$ | 0.297 |  |  |
| 22 .AItop |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 0.0 | 01 | 0.000 |  |  |
| 37 A. Aeanazakonoynoz |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 0.0 | $0^{\prime}$ | 0.000 |  |  |
| 55 E.ANEEANAPOHOYMOL |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | -1.0 |  |  | -1.0\| | -2.0 | 27 ' | -0.074 |  |  |
| 47 B.ZAFAPITHL |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | -1.0\| | -1.0 | 11. | -0.091 |  |  |
| IIANAOHNAIKOz | 7 | 6 | 13 | 23 | 6 | 15 | 3 | 4 | 2 | 10 | 3 | -1 | 8 | 8 | -2 | 6 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 96.0 | 1067' | 0.111 | c: N. ПOГIA | ATOE |
|  | 1 | 1 | 25 | / | / 6 | 69 | $5 /$ | 17 | 77 | 51 | 17 | 89 |  | / 7 | 103 | 5 / | 17 | 118. |  | on tar | get/tot | tal shots | $s$ evaluati | ion points |

Table 1: Evaluation Index from the analyst of Asteras Tripolis for the match: Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos (Greek Superleague 2020-2021)
2) Shots in the penalty and the goal box area: The number shots made by a team play a crucial role in the scoring rate, especially when they are attempted at close range from the rival goalpost. These shots consist of the shots inside the penalty area and the shots inside the goal-box area. Table 2 below presents these attempts from the same match.


```
\Sigma.ANI MпAMMA
```

Ф. MIEROK
soxapi
кเтрเขŋ kapto

X.minpanes
X.Mnapane
X. BAMIENT
A.TIAIKA $\qquad$ 2.ANI MПAM ( $56^{\prime}$ ) in / out adiayn out ( $60^{\circ}$ ) Г.MחOYZOYK / $\triangle$. EEPMEZHZ (70') E.AAEEANAP / A.KOYPMMENHE odגory in / out ( 71') A.XATZHPIO / A. EABIEP
X.TAEOYAHE / Ф.ANBAPEZ ( $71^{\prime}$ ) in / out adגayn
M. ©EPNANTE / X.MOYNA@O ( 72') in / out aג入ory
A. PIEPA
X.tazoynhe

「. KgTEIPAE
adiary in / out ( $86^{\prime}$ ) B. ZAFAPITH / Ө.MAYPOMMATH
xitpivŋ kapta ( $88^{\prime}$ ) A.חоYГГOYPAZ
P.TKAPLIA / Q.PITZIE K ( $90+3$ in / out adiayr


Table 2: Attemts made from the two opponents for the match: Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos (Greek Superleague 2020-2021)
3) Corner Kicks: The number of the corner kicks gained during game shows a lot about the offensive strategy of the team. For instance, if a team usually attacks from the sides, then it will gain more corner kicks than a team which attacks through the central axis of the field. It is also worth mentioning that the number of the corner kicks describe in a way the dominance of a team against the opponent as it shows in a way how much time a team spends in the opponent's area.

## Covariates for the dependence parameter $\lambda_{3}$

As it is mentioned, the parameter $\lambda_{3}$ concerns the level of interaction of the two opponents in a football game. The two teams interact with each other during the match which means that the scoring rate of the teams is affected a lot by the game conditions, such as the speed of the game. Using covariates on $\lambda_{3}$ helps us to have more insight regarding the type of influence. In the following application the dependence parameter $\lambda_{3}$ will be considered to be constant, which is the simplest approach.

### 5.1.2. Data

The data of the following application were provided by the sports analyst of Asteras Tripolis, Thodoris Tsilimigras. In every match, the final score ( $g 1, g 2$ ), the overall ratings of the two opponents (rat1, rat 2 ), the shots from the penalty area (penbox 1 , penbox 2 ), the shots from the goal box (goalbox1, goalbox2) as well as the corner kicks (corner 1 , corner 2 ) constitute the dataset.


Table 3: Part of the data set: Scores and match statistics for the games of Greek Superleague 2019-20 regular season

The teams that take part in this application are:

```
> sl=read.csv("data/sl.csv",stringsAsFactors=T)
> Levels(sl[,2])
```

| [1] "Aek" | "Apollon" | "Aris" | "Atromitos" |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| [5] "Giannena" | "Lamia" | "Larisa" | "Ofi" |
| [9] "Olympiakos" | "Panathinaikos" | "Panetolikos" | "Panionios" |
| $[13] ~ " P a o k " ~$ | "Tripoli" | "Volos" | "Xanthi" |

Table 4: The teams-factors of the data in an alphabetical order

The quality of the selected predictors that are used in the application are evaluated through the R-output below:

```
> sign=glm(g2~rat2+penbox2+goalbox2+corner2,family="poisson",
    data=sl) ; summary(sign)
Deviance Residuals:
    Min 1Q Median 3Q Max
-2.2023 -1.0456 -0.1455 0.4814 2.2553
Coefficients:
    Estimate Std. Error z value Pr(>|z|)
(Intercept) -1.520710 0.179090 -8.491 < 2e-16 ***
rat2 0.008484 0.001442 5.882 4.06e-09 ***
penbox2 0.086295 0.024767 3.484 0.000493 ***
goalbox2 0.192869 0.062014 3.110 0.001870 **
corner2 -0.047022 0.020301 -2.316 0.020546 *
---
Signif. codes: 0 v***' 0.001 v**' 0.01 v*' 0.05 '.' 0.1 ' ' 1
(Dispersion parameter for poisson family taken to be 1)
    Null deviance: 524.42 on 421 degrees of freedom
Residual deviance: 365.05 on 417 degrees of freedom
```

Table 5: Summary of glm

The output presents the level of significance of the predictors in relation to the response variable $g 2$ which denotes the goals achieved by a team during match. It is clear that the intercept as well as the overall rating and the attempts from the penalty area are highly significant. The lowest significance is obtained by the corner kicks that a team gains in a match. It is also worth mentioning that the corner kicks are negatively correlated with the goals scored by a team. This may lead to the conclusion that in the Greek Superleague, the attacking strategy shouldn't be based on gaining corner kicks.
In order to check the dependence between the selected covariates, a correlation matrix is obtained:

|  | Rating | PenaltyBox | GoalBox | Corner |
| :--- | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| Rating | 1.0000000 | 0.5999163 | 0.3391532 | 0.3793011 |
| PenaltyBox | 0.5999163 | 1.0000000 | 0.1121999 | 0.2918752 |
| GoalBox | 0.3391532 | 0.1121999 | 1.0000000 | 0.2288395 |
| Corner | 0.3793011 | 0.2918752 | 0.2288395 | 1.0000000 |
| Table 6: Correlation matrix |  |  |  |  |

The level of correlation between any pair of the explanatory variables above is quite small in general terms, which implies that each of the variables can independently predict the value of the dependent variable.

### 5.1.3. Fitting the models

The analysis of the Greek Superleague 2019-20 and 2020-21 will take place through functions in $R$. The package that contains these functions is made by Karlis and Ntzoufras and it is available at http://www.statathens.aueb.gr/~jbn/papers/paper14.htm. It contains the EM algorithm for fitting the bivariate Poisson model and the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model, as well as some extra functions that the algorithm uses. The R -code is given in the Appendix.

## - Fitting the bivariate Poisson model

The function lm.bp applies the EM algorithm for fitting the bivariate Poisson model of the form $\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \sim B P\left(\lambda_{1 i}, \lambda_{2 i}, \lambda_{3 i}\right)$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$ with $l_{k}=w_{k} \beta_{k}, k=1,2,3$ where $l_{k}=\log \lambda_{k}$. Its syntax is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { lm. } b p(l 1, l 2, l 1 l 2=N U L L, l 3=\sim 1, \text { data, common.intercept } \\
& =\text { FALSE, zeroL3 }=\text { FALSE, maxit }=300, \text { pres }=1 e-8 \text { ) }
\end{aligned}
$$

The input components $\boldsymbol{l} \mathbf{1}, \boldsymbol{l} \mathbf{2}$ and $\boldsymbol{l 3}$ are of the form " $x \sim x_{1}+\cdots+x_{k}$ ", " $y \sim y_{1}+\cdots+y_{k}$ " and " $z \sim z_{1}+\cdots+z_{p}$ " respectively, concerning the parameters of $\log \lambda_{1}, \log \lambda_{2}$ and $\log \lambda_{3}$. The component $\boldsymbol{l 1} \boldsymbol{l} \mathbf{2}$ concerns the common parameters of $\log \lambda_{1}$ and $\log \lambda_{2}$ (whether they exist) and the component data is the data frame which contains the variables. There are also two logical arguments: common.intercept and zeroL3. The first one refers to whether a common intercept on $\log \lambda_{1}$ and $\log \lambda_{2}$ is used and the second one refers to whether $\lambda_{3}$ is set equal to zero. Finally, the component maxit is associated with the maximum number of the EM steps that will take place and the argument pres is the precision that is used to terminate the EM algorithm. If the relative log-likelihood difference is lower than the value of the precision then the EM algorithm will terminate.

```
> biv=lm.bp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+
    penbox2+goalbox2+corner2,11l2=NULL,data=sl)
> biv$coefficients
```

| （11）：（Intercept） | （11）：cornerl | （11）：goalbox1 | （11）：penboxl |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| -1.281071082 | -0.030432260 | 0.100234116 | 0.024295455 |
| （11）：rat1 | $(12):$（Intercept） | $(12):$ corner2 | （12）：goalbox2 |
| 0.008715946 | -1.705548672 | -0.048838609 | 0.197741080 |
| （12）：penbox2 | （12）：rat2 | （13）：（Intercept） |  |
| 0.087018910 | 0.009189555 | -2.709568924 |  |

＞biv\＄parameters
［1］ 11
＞biv\＄iterations
［1］ 56
＞biv\＄lambda1

| 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 0.5867651 | 0.6545679 | 0.9592680 | 1.4153269 | 0.7695189 | 1.2427348 | 0.5843424 |
| 8 | 9 | 10 | 11 | 12 | 13 | 14 |
| 0.5024232 | 0.6462280 | 0.6449372 | 0.6026145 | 0.7003606 | 0.7516502 | 0.8394760 |
| 15 | 16 | 17 | 18 | 19 | 20 | 21 |
| 0.8171303 | 0.8299869 | 2.7480759 | 0.9666780 | 3.2904659 | 2.5934030 | 0.8905061 |
| 22 | 23 | 24 | 25 | 26 | 27 | 28 |
| 35857 | 1 R6フ7598 |  | ก ¢кпаяดマ | 1 ก4ヶマव | 5627 |  |

＞biv\＄lambda2

| 423 | 424 | 425 | 426 | 427 | 428 | 429 |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| 0.3225394 | 0.3917699 | 1.4401005 | 0.5231477 | 1.0097857 | 0.4982117 | 0.5724637 |
| 430 | 431 | 432 | 433 | 434 | 435 | 436 |
| 0.3846402 | 2.7465120 | 0.7274970 | 0.9894295 | 0.7136002 | 0.2979643 | 0.9853445 |
| 437 | 438 | 439 | 440 | 441 | 442 | 443 |
| 0.3015857 | 0.4929298 | 0.6792754 | 0.8979561 | 0.2552321 | 0.5585094 | 0.4903645 |
| 444 | 445 | 446 | 447 | 448 | 440 | 450 |

After estimating the parameters $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ and $\lambda_{3}$ ，the fitted values for the two responses $x$ and $y$（which denote the goals achieved by the two teams）are obtained．The fitted values can be estimated as，

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{x}=\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3} \\
& \hat{y}=\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

The fitted values $\widehat{x}_{l}, \widehat{y_{l}}$ denote the number of goals that each of the two teams deserved to have achieved in the $i$-th match (expected goals). These values arise by taking into account their performance in the $i$ th match (Table 6).

|  | X | y |
| :--- | ---: | ---: |
| 1 | 0.6533306 | 0.3891049 |
| 2 | 0.7211334 | 0.4583354 |
| 3 | 1.0258335 | 1.5066660 |
| 4 | 1.4818924 | 0.5897132 |
| 5 | 0.8360844 | 1.0763512 |
| 6 | 1.3093003 | 0.5647772 |
| 7 | 0.6509079 | 0.6390292 |
| 8 | 0.5689887 | 0.4512057 |
| 9 | 0.7127935 | 2.8130774 |
| 10 | 0.7115027 | 0.7940625 |
| 11 | 0.6691800 | 1.0559950 |
| 12 | 0.7669261 | 0.7801657 |
| 13 | 0.8182157 | 0.3645298 |
| 14 | 0.9060415 | 1.0519100 |
| 15 | 0.8836958 | 0.3681512 |
| 16 | 0.8965524 | 0.5594953 |
| 17 | 2.8146414 | 0.7458409 |
| 18 | 1.0332435 | 0.9645216 |
| 19 | 3.3570314 | 0.3217976 |
| 20 | 2.6599685 | 0.6250749 |

Table 6: Expected goals obtained by the bivariate Poisson model

In many matches, a deviation is observed between the goals that a team achieved and the goals that should have succeeded. For instance, in the 16-th match of the regular season 2019-20 (Xanthi vs Asteras Tripolis) where the final score was $2-1$, the expected goals of Xanthi based on the match performance were 0.8965524 . This leads to the remark that Xanthi was either lucky or too effective due to the fact that it took only few attempts to achieve goal. However, the final result was victory of the home team which is in accordance with the expectation $\hat{x}_{16}>\hat{y}_{16}$.


Graph: Plot of the home and away expected goals

The plot above depicts the relationship between the home expected goals and the away expected goals in the Greek Superleague 2019-20 and the regular season 2020-21. As it appears, in most games the performance of the two opponents is interwoven with about 1 goal for each team. After all, it is observed that in most matches, the levels of performance of the two opponents are similar. This may imply the existence of high competitiveness in the Greek Superleague.

- Fitting the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson models

The function lm.dibp contains the EM algorithm for fitting the diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson model of the form:

$$
\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right) \sim \operatorname{DIBP}\left(\lambda_{1 i}, \lambda_{2 i}, \lambda_{3 i}, p, D(\theta)\right) \text { for } i=1, \ldots, n
$$

with $l_{k}=w_{k} \beta_{k}, k=1,2,3$ where $l_{k}=\log \lambda_{k}$.

Its syntax in R is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { lm. } \operatorname{dibp}(l 1, l 2, l 1 l 2=N U L L, l 3=\sim 1, \text { data, common. intercept } \\
&=F A L S E, \text { zeroL } 3=\text { FALSE } \text {, distribution } \\
&=\text { "discrete",jmax }=2, \text { maxit }=300, \text { pres }=1 e-8)
\end{aligned}
$$

The syntax of the diagonal inflated model above contains an extra input component compared with the bivariate Poisson model. That is the component distribution which refers to the discrete distribution that provokes inflation. The choices could be "poisson", "geometric" or "discrete". In the case of the last choice, the argument jmax is required, which shows up to which draw outcome there will be probability inflation.

A diagonal inflated model with geometric inflation and an inflated model with inflation in the outcomes $0-0$ and $1-1$ will be used for our application. After these attempts, the occasion where $\lambda_{3}=0$ will also be shown which lead to an inflated double Poisson model.

- For the model with geometric inflation:

```
> infg=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+
    goalbox2+corner2,1112=NULL, data=sl,distribution=
    "geometric")
```

> infg\$coefficients

| (11): (Intercept) | (11):cornerl | (11): goalbox1 | (11): penbox1 |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $-1.279176 \mathrm{e}+00$ | $-3.040164 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.002587 \mathrm{e}-01$ | $2.433551 \mathrm{e}-02$ |
| (11): rat1 | $(12):$ (Intercept) | $(12):$ corner2 | $(12):$ goalbox2 |
| $8.707181 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $-1.703233 \mathrm{e}+00$ | $-4.882711 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.976890 \mathrm{e}-01$ |
| (12):penbox2 | (12):rat2 | $(13):$ (Intercept) | p |
| $8.701068 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $9.181056 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $-2.721915 \mathrm{e}+00$ | $1.680058 \mathrm{e}-07$ |
| theta |  |  |  |
| $5.588838 \mathrm{e}-01$ |  |  |  |

The fitted values of the responses $x, y$ are expressed as,

$$
\begin{gathered}
\hat{x}=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right) \text { and } \hat{y}=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right) \quad, x \neq y \\
\hat{x}=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[x] \text { and } \hat{y}=(1-p)\left(\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}\right)+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[x], x=y
\end{gathered}
$$

|  | X |  |
| :--- | ---: | ---: |
| 1 | 0.6532962 | 0.3889015 |
| 2 | 0.7214134 | 0.4581913 |
| 3 | 1.0260070 | 1.5071227 |
| 4 | 1.4823479 | 0.5896923 |
| 5 | 0.8360864 | 1.0767139 |
| 6 | 1.3093623 | 0.5647241 |
| 7 | 0.6508729 | 0.6388756 |
| 8 | 0.5688879 | 0.4510025 |
| 9 | 0.7127779 | 2.8132190 |
| 10 | 0.7115284 | 0.7941918 |
| 11 | 0.6691527 | 1.0564574 |
| 12 | 0.7668757 | 0.7803050 |
| 13 | 0.8183594 | 0.3642685 |
| 14 | 0.9060445 | 1.0519200 |
| 15 | 0.8838574 | 0.3679034 |
| 16 | 0.8966062 | 0.5594414 |
| 17 | $0.50 \sim n$ | $\sim 1$ |

Table 7: Expected goals obtained by the bivariate Poisson with geometric inflation

- For the model with the discrete inflation with $\boldsymbol{j}=\mathbf{1}$ :
> inf1=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+ penbox2+goalbox2+corner2, 1112=NULL, data= sl,jmax=1)
> inf1\$coefficients

| (11) : (Intercept) | (11) : corner1 | (11) : goalboxl | (11) : penbox1 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| -1.2796688377 | -0.0304057762 | 0.1002380657 | 0.0243202935 |
| (11) : ratl | (12) : (Intercept) | (12) : corner2 | (12) : goalbox2 |
| 0.0087097908 | -1.7038724992 | -0.0488136144 | 0.1977210394 |
| (12) : penbox2 | (12) : rat2 | (13) : (Intercept) | p |
| 0.0870290428 | 0.0091829090 | -2.7192886316 | 0.0001305199 |
| thetal |  |  |  |
| 1.0000000000 |  |  |  |

- Finally, the inflated double Poisson model will be obtained by putting $\lambda_{3}=0$ in the last model. After all, as it is mentioned, the dependence between the two opponents can be expressed by the inflated model even if $\lambda_{3}=0$.

```
> infdp=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+
    penbox2+goalbox2+corner2,1112=NULL, data=
    zeroL3=TRUE,jmax=1)
```

The fitted values $\hat{x}$ and $\hat{y}$ in the inflated double-Poisson occasion are:

$$
\begin{gathered}
\hat{x}=(1-p) \lambda_{1} \text { and } \hat{y}=(1-p) \lambda_{2} \quad, \quad x \neq y \\
\hat{x}=(1-p) \lambda_{1}+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[x] \text { and } \hat{y}=(1-p) \lambda_{2}+p \mathbb{E}_{D}[x], x=y
\end{gathered}
$$

### 5.1.4. Model comparison

Four bivariate models were used for analyzing the Greek Superleague 2020-19 and 2020-21. The following matrix depicts a summary of this analysis.

|  | Parameters | AIC | BIC Mix. Prop (p) |
| :--- | :---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| Bivariate Poisson | 112081.151 | 2133.271 | 0.000000 |
| Inflated with Discrete(1) | 132085.153 | 2146.749 | 0.0130500 |
| Inflated with Geometric | 132085.151 | 2146.747 | 0.0000168 |
| Inflated Double-Poisson | 122084.952 | 2141.810 | 0.0460200 |

Table 8: Comparison of the fitted-models

A considerable remark is that the bivariate Poisson model seems to be a preferable option due to the fact that the AIC and BIC values of this model are smaller than the others. Although the inflated bivariate Poisson models are generally considered to be better options when analyzing football matches, in the case of Greek Superleague there was no excess in draw outcomes. This makes the simple bivariate Poisson model a better fit to our data.

Finally, let us compare the bivariate Poisson model above (which uses match statistics as covariates) with the bivariate Poisson model whose explanatory variables are the goals that teams have succeeded and conceded so far. After all, many authors suggest the latter.

```
Bivariate Poisson -1029.576 2081.151 2133.271
```

Bivariate Poisson (goals as cov) -1098.000 2269.0302444 .342

Table 9: Comparison of the fitted-bivariate Poisson model and the bivariate Poisson model that uses goals as covariates

It is clear that the model that uses the game ratings and statistics as covariates is proved to be a better option according to the table above. As a result, the model that will be used for the prediction that follows is the bivariate Poisson model which uses the match ratings and statistics as covariates.

### 5.2. Prediction

### 5.2.1. Predicting a playoff match

In a football game, the scoring rates of the two opponents $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}$ are estimated through their game statistics and ratings. However, the match statistics are unknown before a match starts. As a result, in order to predict the outcome of an upcoming football match, the statistics of this match must be firstly estimated (Edward Wheatcroft 2020).

After analyzing the seasons 2019-20 and 2020-21 of the Greek Championship we will make a prediction for the first playoff match of the season 2020-21. The prediction will take place through the function bivpois.table (Karlis and Ntzoufras). Its syntax in $R$ is:

$$
\text { bivpois.table }(x, y, \operatorname{lambda}=c(1,1,1))
$$

This function returns a probability matrix (with $(x+1) \times(y+1)$ dimension) of the bivariate Poisson distribution using recursive relations. The components $\boldsymbol{x}$ and $\boldsymbol{y}$ show the values that will be evaluated. The cell $i j$ in the matrix contains the probability $P(X=i-1, Y=j-1)$. It is reasonable that $x$ and $y$ must be at least 1. The component lambda is a vector that contains the values of the parameters $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \lambda_{3}$.
The first match of the playoff period of the season 2020-21 was Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos. By calculating the expected statistics of the two teams before the match, the scoring rates $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ can be obtained. The dependence parameter $\lambda_{3}$ is constant and equal to 0.00665655 .

```
> l1=exp(-1.281071082+0.008715946*ratA+0.024295455*penboxA+
    0.100234116*goalboxA-0.030432260*cornerA);11
```

[1] 1.163891

$$
\begin{gathered}
>12=\exp (-1.705548672+0.009189555 * \text { ratP }+0.087018910 * \text { penboxP }+ \\
0.197741080 * \text { goalboxP-0.048838609*97orner }) ; 12
\end{gathered}
$$

By calling the function bivpois.table $(8,8, \operatorname{lambda}(l 1, l 2, l 3)$ the probabilities of all the outcomes up to $8-8$ are obtained.

|  | [, 1] | [,2] | $[, 3]$ | $[, 4]$ | 5] |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| [1, ] | $1.215967 \mathrm{e}-01$ | $1.065903 \mathrm{e}-01$ | $4.671790 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.365079 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $2.991531 \mathrm{e}-03$ |
| $[2$, | $1.415254 \mathrm{e}-01$ | $1.321536 \mathrm{e}-01$ | $6.146979 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.899784 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $4.390488 \mathrm{e}-03$ |
| [3, ] | $8.236008 e-02$ | $8.161660 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $4.017052 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.310159 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $3.187326 \mathrm{e}-03$ |
| [ 4, ] | $3.195273 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $3.349173 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $1.739566 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $5.974267 e-03$ | $1.527272 \mathrm{e}-03$ |
| [5, ] | $9.297378 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $1.027692 \mathrm{e}-02$ | $5.619013 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $2.027837 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $5.438147 e-04$ |
| $[6$, | $2.164228 e-03$ | $2.516021 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $1.444802 \mathrm{e}-03$ | $5.468430 \mathrm{e}-04$ | $1.535850 \mathrm{e}-04$ |
| [7, ] | $4.198210 \mathrm{e}-04$ | 5.120731 e 04 | $3.081788 \mathrm{e}-04$ | $1.221066 \mathrm{e}-04$ | 3.585953e-05 |
| [8, ] | $6.980372 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $8.913472 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $5.611043 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $2.323328 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $7.123527 e-06$ |
| [9, ] | $1.015549 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $1.354871 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $8.904969 \mathrm{e}-06$ | $3.847004 e-06$ | $1.229693 \mathrm{e}-06$ |
|  | $[, 6]$ | [,7] | $[, 8]$ | $[, 9]$ |  |
| [1, ] | $5.244682 \mathrm{e}-04$ | $7.662379 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $9.595361 \mathrm{e}-06$ | $1.051398 \mathrm{e}-06$ |  |
| $[2$, | $8.095568 \mathrm{e}-04$ | 1.240933e-04 | $1.626846 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $1.862433 \mathrm{e}-06$ |  |
| [3, ] | $6.172456 \mathrm{e}-04$ | 9.915982e-05 | $1.359753 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $1.625294 \mathrm{e}-06$ |  |
| $[4,1$ | $3.101910 \mathrm{e}-04$ | $5.216618 e-05$ | $7.475555 e-06$ | $9.322639 \mathrm{e}-07$ |  |
| [5, ] | $1.156731 \mathrm{e}-04$ | $2.034094 \mathrm{e}-05$ | $3.043301 \mathrm{e}-06$ | $3.956670 \mathrm{e}-07$ |  |
| $[6$, | $3.416603 e-05$ | $6.274897 e-06$ | $9.792153 \mathrm{e}-07$ | $1.326184 e-07$ |  |
| [7, ] | $8.331503 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 1.596263e-06 | $2.595653 \mathrm{e}-07$ | $3.658924 \mathrm{e}-08$ |  |
| [8, ] | 1.726282e-06 | $3.446382 \mathrm{e}-07$ | $5.833741 \mathrm{e}-08$ | $8.551999 \mathrm{e}-09$ |  |
| [9, ] | $3.104232 \mathrm{e}-07$ | $6.450403 \mathrm{e}-08$ | $1.135493 \mathrm{e}-08$ | $1.729607 \mathrm{e}-09$ |  |

Table 10: Probability matrix for the scores of the playoff match: Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos

By taking the sum of the elements of the matrix diagonal as well as the sum of the elements above and below the diagonal, the following probabilities are obtained:

Asteras Tripolis win: 42,4\%
Draw: 30\%
Panathinaikos win: 27,6\%

The actual final result in this match was $2-2$.

### 5.2.2. Betting odds

In betting companies, the bookmakers use betting odds to describe an upcoming match. By inversing the win-draw-lose probabilities of the match Asteras Tripolis vs Panathinaikos above, the following betting values-odds arise:

Asteras Tripolis win: 2,35
Draw: 3,33
Panathinaikos win: 3,62

Certainly, the betting odds of many other characteristics of the game (such as how many goals are going to be achieved in general) can also be obtained by inversing of the respective probabilities from the matrix above.
These betting odds above are usually reduced by bookmakers so that there is a gain for the companies. Actually, the relation between the betting odds $o_{i}$ and the probabilities $p_{i}$ of an event $i$ is expressed as,

$$
p_{i}=\frac{1}{o_{i}+g}
$$

where g is the gain of the bookmaker.
As a result, it easy to notice that the odds in practice also contain the market value information.

## Conclusion

Sports analytics constitute a sector of statistics which is continually evolving while making the predictions of many sport events more and more effective. In the case of football, there have been many predictive models so far, each of which has its own specifications and properties. It is worth mentioning that sometimes, considering models with simpler structure than others may be preferable. Concerning the information which predictive models use, the in-game statistics and ratings are more informative than the goals that teams have been succeeded so far. These facts could be of great interest, as the companies associated with football, such as betting companies, can improve their approach on modeling and prediction, which will lead to increase of profits. More importantly, the teams themselves could assess various characteristics and make decisions in order to increase their chances for a successful outcome.

## References

Kocherlakota S, Kocherlakota K (1992). "Bivariate Discrete distributions". New York: Marcel Dekker
stat.auckland.ac.nz
Joel Liden (2016). "Bivariate models to predict football results". U.U.D.M. Project Report

Martin Haugh (2016). "An introduction to copulas". Quantitative risk management

Chandra R. Bhat, Naveen Eluru (2009). "A copula-based approach to accommodate residential self-selection effects in travel behavior modeling". University of Texas at Austin

Roemer J. Janse, Tiny Hoekstra, Kitty J. Jager, Carmine Zoccali, Giovanni Tripepi, Friedo W. Dekker, Merel van Diepen (2021). "Conducting correlation analysis". Clinical Kidney Journal

David Nettleton (2014). "Pearson Correlation". Commercial Data Mining.

Theodosis Dimitrakos (2012). "Kendall Notes" . Notes, Mathematics Department of Samos
P. McCullagh, J.A. Nedler (1982). "Generalized Linear Models"
http://biometry.github.io/APES//LectureNotes/2016JAGS/Overdispersion/OverdispersionJAGS.html

Joseph M. Hilbe (2014). "Modeling Count Data". Cambridge University Press

Farid Kianifard, Paul P. Gallo (2007). "Poisson regression analysis in clinical research". Journal of Biopharmaceutical Statistics

Eugene D. Hahn, Refik Soyer (2005). "Probit and Logit Models:Differences in the Multivariate Realm"

Alan Agresti (2010). "Analysis of Ordinal Categorical Data". A John Wiley and Sons, Inc, Publication

Anne R. Daykin, Peter G. Moffatt (2010). "Analyzing ordered responses: A review of the ordered probit model. Understanding statistics

Daniel B. Hall (2000). "Zero-inflated Poisson and Binomial Regression with random effects: A case study". Department of Statistics, University of Georgia

Benjamin Ghojogh, Aydin Ghojogh, Mark Crowley, Fakhri Karray (2020). "Fitting a mixture distribution to Data: Tutorial". Stat.OT

Sujit K. Ghosh, Pabak Mukhopadhyay, Jye-Chyi Lu (2006). "Bayesian Analysis of zero-inflated regression models". Journal of statistical planning and inference

Nianci Gan (2000). "General zero-inflated models and their applications". North Carolina State University Project

Sun Y. Jeon (2013). "Zero-inflated Poisson regression"
Kevin E. Staub, Rainer Winkelmann (2012). "Consistent estimation od zero-inflated count models". Wiley Online Library

Farid Kianifard, Paul P. Gallo (2007). "Poisson regression analysis in clinical research". Journal of Biopharmaceutical Statistics

Gary Napier (2020). "Time Series". Course
Shu Kay Ng, Thriyambakam Krishnan Goeffrey J. McLachlan (2012). "The EM algorithm". Handbook of Computational Statistics

Nan Laird (1993). "The EM Algorithm". Handbook of Statistics
Yuzhen Ye (2018). "Expectation-Maximization algorithm (EM)". Machine Learning in Bioinformatics

Maya R. Gupta, Yihua Chen (2010). "Theory and Use of the EM Algorithm".

Samis Trevezas (2021). "Statistics for stochastic processes". Notes, Mathematics Department, Athens
(2016). "The Bradley-Terry model". Introduction to Statistical Inference, Lecture 24

Roger R. Davidson (1970). "On extending the Bradley-Terry model to accommodate ties in paired comparison experiments". Journal of the American Statistical Association

Gunther Schauberger, Andreas Groll, Gerhard Tutz (2017). "Analysis of the importance of on-field covariates in the German Bundesliga". Journal of Applied Statistics

Simon Jackman (2000). "Models for ordered outcomes". Political Science 200C

Dimitris Karlis, Ioannis Ntzoufras (2003). "Analysis of sports data by using bivariate Poisson models". The Statistician

Rasmus Ekman (2020). "Bivariate copula-based regression for modeling results of football matches".

Kocherlakota S., Kocherlakota K. (2001). "Regression in the bivariate Poisson distribution". Communication in Statistics

Dimitris Karlis, Ioannis Ntzoufras (2020). "Intro and current issues of football analytics". Short course on football analytics, AUEB

Dimitris Karlis, Ioannis Ntzoufras (2020). "The simple Double Poisson model". Short course on football analytics, AUEB

Dimitris Karlis, Ioannis Ntzoufras (2005). "Bivariate Poisson and diagonal inflated bivariate Poisson regression models in R". Journal of Statistical Software

Kimberly F. Sellers, Darcy Steeg Morris, Narayanaswamy Balakrishnan (2016). "Bivariate Conway-Maxwell-Poisson distribution: Formulation, properties and inference". Journal of Multivariate Analysis

Rufin Bidounga, Evgrand Giles Brunel Mandangui Maloumbi, Reolie Foxie Mizele Kitoti, Dominique Mizere (2020). "The new bivariate Conway-Maxwell-Poisson distribution obtained by the crossing method". International Journal of Statistics and Probability
pena.lt/y/2015/12/12/frequency-of-draws-in-football/

Mark J. Dixon, Stuart G. Coles (1997). "Modelling association football scores and inefficiencies in the football betting market". Appl. Statist.

Siem Jan Koopman, Rutger Lit (2014). " A dynamic bivariate Poisson model for analyzing and forecasting match results in the English Premier League". Journal of the Royal Statistical Society

Andreas Groll, Thomas Kneib, Andreas Mayr, Gunther Schauberger (2018). "On the dependency of soccer scores - a sparse bivariate Poisson model for the UEFA European football championship 2016". Journal of Sports Analytics

Edward Wheatcroft (2020). "Forecasting football matches by predicting match statistics". London School of Economics and Political Science

Hongyou Liu (2015). "Evaluation on match performances of professional football players and teams under different situational conditions".INEF

Dimitris Karlis, Ioannis Ntzoufras (2005). "Bivariate Poisson models using the EM algorithm". The bivpois Package

Jasmine Siwei Xu (2011). "Online Sports Gambling: A look into the efficiency of bookmakers' odds as forecasts in the case of English Premier League". Undergraduate Economics Honor Thesis, California)

## APPENDIX

## A1. Data Set

| 1 | team1 | team2 | g1 |  | g2 |  | rat1 |  | rat2 |  | penbox1 | penbox2 | goalbox1 | goalbox2 | corner1 | corner2 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 2 | Aek | Xanthi |  | 1 |  | 2 |  | 82 |  | 50 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 10 |  | $3 \quad 3$ |
| 3 | Aris | Ofi |  | 1 |  | 1 |  | 89 |  | 70 | 8 | 2 | 1 | 10 |  | 71 |
| 4 | Atromitos | Larisa |  | 1 |  | 1 |  | 144 |  | 155 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 12 |  | 72 |
| 5 | Olympiake | Tripoli |  | 1 |  | 0 |  | 167 |  | 92 | 8 | 3 | 1 | 10 |  | 41 |
| 6 | Panionios | Volos |  | 1 |  | 2 |  | 133 |  | 131 | 3 | 7 | 0 | 0 |  | 72 |
| 7 | Paok | Panetolike |  | 2 |  | 1 |  | 173 |  | 92 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 10 |  | 62 |
| 8 | Lamia | Panathinai |  | 1 |  | 1 |  | 92 |  | 142 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 10 |  | 65 |
| 9 | Larisa | Olympiake |  | 0 |  | 1 |  | 60 |  | 89 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 1 |  | 19 |
| 10 | Tripoli | Aek |  | 2 |  | 3 |  | 99 |  | 226 | 3 | 9 | 0 | - 1 |  | 37 |
| 11 | Volos | Aris |  | 1 |  | 0 |  | 89 |  | 110 | 4 | 2 | 0 | - 3 |  | 18 |
| 12 | Panathinai |  |  | 1 |  | 3 |  | 84 |  | 114 | 3 | 8 | 0 | 0 |  | $1 \quad 1$ |
| 13 | Panetolikc | Xanthi |  | 1 |  | 2 |  | 118 |  | 111 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 0 |  | 50 |
| 14 | Paok | Panionios |  | 2 |  | 1 |  | 123 |  | 55 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 10 |  | 92 |
| 15 | Lamia | Atromitos |  | 2 |  | 2 |  | 136 |  | 178 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 |  | 56 |
| 16 | Aek | Lamia |  | 2 |  | 0 |  | 142 |  | 51 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  | $0 \quad 1$ |
| 17 | Xanthi | Tripoli |  | 2 |  | 1 |  | 119 |  | 92 | 2 | 4 | 1 | 10 |  | 3 |
| 18 | Aris | Panathinai |  | 4 |  | 0 |  | 202 |  | 119 | 5 | 2 | 5 | 51 |  | 3 3 |
| 19 | Atromitos | Paok |  | 2 |  | 3 |  | 133 |  | 160 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 11 |  | 25 |
| 20 | Olympiakc | Volos |  | 5 |  | 0 |  | 253 |  | 34 | 9 | 2 | 2 | 20 |  | 5 3 |
| 21 | Ofi | Panetolike |  | 3 |  | 1 |  | 241 |  | 134 | 8 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  | 24 |
| 22 | Panionios | Larisa |  | 1 |  | 0 |  | 133 |  | 121 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 |  | 36 |
| 23 | Larisa | Xanthi |  | 3 |  | 0 |  | 201 |  | 87 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  | 70 |
| 24 | Tripoli | Atromitos |  | 2 |  | 1 |  | 217 |  | 184 | 8 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  | $6 \quad 6$ |
| 25 | Volos | Ofi |  | 1 |  | 0 |  | 135 |  | 156 | 7 | 4 | 0 | - 1 |  | 310 |
| 26 | Panathinai | Olympiake |  | 1 |  | 1 |  | 69 |  | 124 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 10 |  | 25 |
| 27 | Lamia | Panionios |  | 1 |  | 1 |  | 155 |  | 117 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 |  | 41 |
| 28 | Panetolikc | Aek |  | 0 |  | 1 |  | 88 |  | 165 | 0 | 7 | 0 | - 1 |  | 23 |
| 29 | Paok | Aris |  | 2 |  | 2 |  | 135 |  | 102 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 |  | 8 3 |
| 30 | Aek | Paok |  | 2 |  | 2 |  | 136 |  | 137 | 2 | 6 | 1 | 12 |  | 34 |
| 31 | Xanti | Volos |  | 3 |  | 1 |  | 260 |  | 150 | 8 | 4 | 0 | 0 |  | 43 |


| 32 | Aris | Larisa | 2 | 3 | 204 | 176 | 10 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 15 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 33 | Atromitos | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 137 | 93 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 34 | Olympiake | Lamia | 2 | 0 | 249 | 71 | 7 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 0 |
| 35 | Ofi | Tripoli | 3 | 1 | 264 | 122 | 13 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 3 |
| 36 | Panionios | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 78 | 185 | 0 | 7 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 37 | Larisa | Aek | 0 | 0 | 66 | 72 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 4 |
| 38 | Aris | Olympiake | 1 | 2 | 120 | 166 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 3 |
| 39 | Tripoli | Paok | 1 | 2 | 180 | 154 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 5 |
| 40 | volos | Atromitos | 2 | 3 | 61 | 106 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 6 |
| 41 | Ofi | Panionios | 4 | 1 | 317 | 148 | 11 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| 42 | Panathinai | Xanthi | 0 | 1 | 128 | 105 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 7 | 1 |
| 43 | Lamia | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 118 | 52 | 15 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 7 |
| 44 | Aek | Volos | 3 | 2 | 198 | 99 | 7 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 10 | 3 |
| 45 | Xanthi | Aris | 0 | 1 | 64 | 86 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 46 | Atromitos | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 102 | 170 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 3 |
| 47 | Olympiake |  | 2 | 1 | 194 | 109 | 9 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| 48 | Panetolikc | Larisa | 2 | 2 | 122 | 157 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 4 | 4 |
| 49 | Panionios | Tripoli | 0 | 1 | 94 | 107 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 4 |
| 50 | Paok | Lamia | 3 | 0 | 225 | 85 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 51 | Aris | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 106 | 68 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 3 |
| 52 | Tripoli | Lamia | 4 | 1 | 193 | 78 | 1 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 5 | 1 |
| 53 | Atromitos | Panionios | 4 | 0 | 200 | 122 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 9 |
| 54 | volos | Paok | 0 | 2 | 132 | 183 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 8 |
| 55 | Olympiake | Aek | 2 | 0 | 173 | 127 | 2 | 6 | 2 | 0 | 7 | 6 |
| 56 | Ofi | Xanthi | 2 | 0 | 157 | 99 | 6 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 4 |
| 57 | Panathinai | Larisa | 1 | 2 | 151 | 101 | 7 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 0 |
| 58 | Aek | Atromitos | 3 | 2 | 247 | 138 | 8 | 5 | 3 | 1 | 7 | 5 |
| 59 | Larisa | Ofi | 3 | 2 | 132 | 140 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 5 |
| 60 | Xanthi | Olympiake | 0 | 0 | 124 | 215 | 2 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 13 |
| 61 | Panetolikc | Tripoli | 1 | 1 | 109 | 86 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 1 |
| 62 | Panionios | Aris | 1 | 1 | 98 | 199 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 4 |
| 63 | Paok | Panathinai | 2 | 2 | 238 | 169 | 7 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 |
| 64 | Lamia | Volos | 1 | 0 | 181 | 101 | 5 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 11 | 3 |
| 65 | Larisa | Lamia | 0 | 3 | 214 | 198 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 1 |
| 66 | Xanthi | Panionios | 1 | 2 | 173 | 191 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 2 | 6 | 2 |
| 67 | Aris | Tripoli | 2 | 1 | 205 | 183 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 68 | Volos | Panetolike | 3 | 2 | 141 | 168 | 1 | 6 | 3 | 0 | 6 | 6 |
| 69 | Olympiake | Atromitos | 2 | 0 | 231 | 115 | 11 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 11 | 1 |
| 70 | Ofi | Paok | 0 | 1 | 89 | 128 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 7 | 5 |
| 71 | Panathinai | Aek | 3 | 2 | 172 | 138 | 4 | 11 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| 72 | Aek | Aris | 1 | 1 | 117 | 91 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 2 |
| 73 | Tripoli | Volos | 0 | 0 | 165 | 98 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 1 |
| 74 | Atromitos | Ofi | 2 | 1 | 223 | 197 | 9 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 4 |
| 75 | Panetolike | Panathinai | 0 | 0 | 107 | 118 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 5 |
| 76 | Lamia | Xanthi | 1 | 0 | 155 | 84 | 8 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| 77 | Panionios | Olympiake | 1 | 1 | 109 | 252 | 1 | 10 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 14 |
| 78 | Paok | Larisa | 1 | 0 | 218 | 122 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 4 |
| 79 | Larisa | Volos | 2 | 1 | 213 | 185 | 8 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 80 | Xanthi | Atromitos | 1 | 0 | 129 | 192 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 7 |
| 81 | Aris | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 263 | 169 | 8 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| 82 | Olympiake | Paok | 1 | 1 | 205 | 125 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 9 | 2 |
| 83 | Ofi | Aek | 1 | 0 | 153 | 108 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 84 | Panathinai | Tripoli | 1 | 0 | 167 | 135 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 1 |
| 85 | Panionios | Panetolike | 3 | 0 | 159 | 129 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 86 | Aek | Panionios | 5 | 0 | 208 | 86 | 6 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 10 | 4 |
| 87 | Tripoli | Larisa | 1 | 1 | 209 | 124 | 7 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 1 |
| 88 | Atromitos | Aris | 2 | 2 | 163 | 164 | 7 | 10 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 7 |
| 89 | Volos | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 134 | 160 | 6 | 7 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 90 | Panetolike | Olympiake | 0 | 3 | 145 | 223 | 2 | 6 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 4 |
| 91 | Paok | Xanthi | 2 | 0 | 238 | 102 | 6 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 15 | 0 |
| 92 | Lamia | Ofi | 2 | 1 | 143 | 132 | 4 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 2 |
| 93 | Larisa | Atromitos | 1 | 2 | 207 | 137 | 8 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 2 |


| 94 | Xanthi | Aek | 0 | 1 | 63 | 86 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 95 | Tripoli | Olympiake | 0 | 5 | 118 | 286 | 0 | 9 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 4 |
| 96 | volos | Panionios | 2 | 1 | 205 | 133 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 11 |
| 97 | Ofi | Aris | 3 | 1 | 174 | 126 | 7 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 11 |
| 98 | Panathinai | Lamia | 2 | 0 | 166 | 103 | 5 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 10 | 2 |
| 99 | Panetolike | Paok | 0 | 3 | 81 | 156 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 8 |
| 100 | Aek | Tripoli | 2 | 1 | 126 | 151 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 5 | 4 |
| 101 | Xanthi | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 150 | 87 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 2 |
| 102 | Aris | Volos | 4 | 0 | 245 | 157 | 7 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 11 | 6 |
| 103 | Atromitos | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 111 | 120 | 2 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 2 |
| 104 | Olympiakc | Larisa | 4 | 1 | 243 | 119 | 8 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 2 |
| 105 | Ofi | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 170 | 134 | 3 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 3 |
| 106 | Panionios | Paok | 0 | 2 | 120 | 249 | 2 | 7 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 11 |
| 107 | Larisa | Panionios | 2 | 0 | 232 | 122 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 5 |
| 108 | Tripoli | Xanthi | 5 | 0 | 257 | 61 | 6 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 1 |
| 109 | Volos | Olympiake | 0 | 0 | 86 | 193 | 1 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 10 |
| 110 | Panathinai | Aris | 0 | 0 | 117 | 121 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 10 | 7 |
| 111 | Panetolikc |  | 2 | 0 | 148 | 93 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 7 |
| 112 | Paok | Atromitos | 5 | 1 | 251 | 136 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 9 | 1 |
| 113 | Lamia | Aek | 0 | 0 | 124 | 145 | 0 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 5 | 6 |
| 114 | Aek | Panetolikc | 3 | 1 | 169 | 112 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 1 |
| 115 | Xanthi | Larisa | 2 | 1 | 114 | 83 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 9 |
| 116 | Aris | Paok | 4 | 2 | 154 | 149 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 117 | Atromitos | Tripoli | 2 | 1 | 96 | 114 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 1 |
| 118 | Olympiake | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 195 | 124 | 5 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 3 |
| 119 | Ofi | Volos | 1 | 2 | 215 | 130 | 9 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 2 |
| 120 | Panionios | Lamia | 0 | 1 | 94 | 100 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 2 |
| 121 | Larisa | Aris | 0 | 0 | 126 | 121 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 6 | 4 |
| 122 | Tripoli | Ofi | 2 | 0 | 183 | 122 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 3 |
| 123 | Volos | Xanthi | 1 | 3 | 80 | 158 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 2 |
| 124 | Panathinai | Panionios | 3 | 0 | 166 | 54 | 6 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 125 | Panetolikc | Atromitos | 0 | 1 | 128 | 118 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 4 |
| 126 | Paok | Aek | 1 | 0 | 119 | 111 | 7 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 5 |
| 127 | Lamia | Olympiakc | 0 | 4 | 80 | 241 | 2 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 10 |
| 128 | Aek | Larisa | 3 | 0 | 162 | 57 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 11 | 3 |
| 129 | Xanthi | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 68 | 109 | 2 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 8 |
| 130 | Atromitos | Volos | 0 | 0 | 117 | 69 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 11 | 4 |
| 131 | Olympiakc |  | 4 | 2 | 188 | 148 | 4 | 2 | 3 | 2 | 5 | 3 |
| 132 | Panetoliko | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 164 | 132 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 10 | 1 |
| 133 | Panionios | Ofi | 1 | 2 | 108 | 241 | 3 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 6 |
| 134 | Paok | Tripoli | 3 | 1 | 196 | 131 | 6 | 2 | 4 | 1 | 6 | 3 |
| 135 | Larisa | Panetolike | 2 | 2 | 127 | 133 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 8 | 5 |
| 136 | Aris | Xanthi | 1 | 0 | 135 | 75 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| 137 | Tripoli | Panionios | 2 | 0 | 157 | 107 | 4 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 5 |
| 138 | Volos | Aek | 1 | 3 | 62 | 194 | 2 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 139 | Ofi | Olympiakc | 0 | 1 | 134 | 144 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 2 | 5 | 4 |
| 140 | Panathinai | Atromitos | 3 | 0 | 267 | 118 | 10 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 8 | 3 |
| 141 | Lamia | Paok | 0 | 1 | 66 | 100 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 3 | 1 |
| 142 | Aek | Olympiake | 0 | 0 | 81 | 89 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 8 |
| 143 | Larisa | Panathinai | 0 | 2 | 84 | 113 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 5 |
| 144 | Xanthi | Ofi | 2 | 2 | 145 | 136 | 0 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 2 | 2 |
| 145 | Panetolike | Aris | 2 | 0 | 164 | 162 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 6 |
| 146 | Panionios | Atromitos | 1 | 0 | 215 | 138 | 7 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 9 | 0 |
| 147 | Paok | Volos | 1 | 0 | 161 | 102 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 9 | 4 |
| 148 | Lamia | Tripoli | 1 | 1 | 60 | 47 | 5 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 |
|  | Aris | Panionios | 2 | 0 | 258 | 78 | 8 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
|  | Tripoli | Panetolikc | 2 | 1 | 222 | 133 | 10 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 4 |
|  | Atromitos | Aek | 0 | 1 | 85 | 106 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 4 |
| 152 | Volos | Lamia | 1 | 0 | 159 | 123 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 5 |
| 153 | Olympiakc | Xanthi | 3 | 1 | 172 | 162 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 1 |
| 154 | Ofi | Larisa | 0 | 0 | 168 | 119 | 6 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 9 | 3 |
| 155 | Panathinai | Paok | 2 | 0 | 164 | 152 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 3 |


| 156 Aek | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 141 | 115 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 157 Tripoli A | Aris | 1 | 1 | 117 | 127 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 10 |
| 158 Atromitos | Olympiake | 0 | 1 | 126 | 193 | 1 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 10 |
| 159 Panetolike V | Volos | 1 | 1 | 100 | 114 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 8 | 2 |
| 160 Panionios | Xanthi | 0 | 0 | 120 | 188 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 161 Paok | Ofi | 4 | 0 | 197 | 111 | 5 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| 162 Lamia | Larisa | 0 | 0 | 118 | 111 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 1 |
| 163 Larisa | Paok | 1 | 2 | 143 | 159 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 1 |
| 164 Xanthi | Lamia | 0 | 0 | 160 | 115 | 6 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 10 | 1 |
| 165 Aris | Aek | 0 | 1 | 119 | 137 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 166 Volos | Tripoli | 0 | 1 | 72 | 158 | 0 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 4 |
| 167 Olympiake P | Panionios | 4 | 0 | 330 | 115 | 8 | 5 | 3 | 0 | 6 | 5 |
| 168 Ofi | Atromitos | 1 | 0 | 113 | 69 | 3 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 1 |
| 169 Panathinai | Panetolikc | 3 | 1 | 198 | 171 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 8 | 3 |
| 170 Aek | Ofi | 3 | 0 | 217 | 122 | 8 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 1 |
| 171 Tripoli | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 125 | 110 | 2 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 0 |
| 172 Atromitos $X$ | Xanthi | 1 | 0 | 167 | 169 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 4 |
| 173 Volos | Larisa | 0 | 0 | 112 | 90 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| 174 Panetolike P | Panionios | 1 | 0 | 129 | 83 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 0 |
| 175 Paok | Olympiake | 0 | 1 | 111 | 124 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 12 | 3 |
| 176 Lamia | Aris | 2 | 2 | 152 | 161 | 7 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 0 |
| 177 Larisa | Tripoli | 3 | 0 | 150 | 132 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 4 |
| 178 Xanthi | Paok | 1 | 1 | 119 | 135 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 6 |
| 179 Aris | Atromitos | 1 | 2 | 176 | 142 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 3 |
| 180 Olympiake P | Panetolikc | 2 | 0 | 211 | 84 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 0 |
| 181 Ofi | Lamia | 3 | 0 | 154 | 101 | 6 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 182 Panathinai | Volos | 4 | 1 | 179 | 137 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 4 |
| 183 Panionios A | Aek | 1 | 1 | 146 | 215 | 4 | 9 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 11 |
| 184 Aek | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 116 | 115 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 185 Aris | Ofi | 3 | 1 | 169 | 177 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 6 |
| 186 Paok | Olympiake | 0 | 1 | 126 | 112 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 187 Xanthi | Atromitos | 1 | 0 | 120 | 104 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 188 Larisa | Tripoli | 1 | 2 | 123 | 133 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 7 |
| 189 Panionios | Volos | 1 | 0 | 118 | 125 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 7 |
| 190 Lamia | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 124 | 122 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 7 |
| 191 Olympiake | Aris | 3 | 1 | 217 | 161 | 7 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 5 | 1 |
| 192 Ofi | Aek | 0 | 2 | 91 | 160 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 |
| 193 Panathinai | Paok | 0 | 0 | 123 | 145 | 1 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 5 |
| 194 Tripoli | Panionios | 0 | 0 | 154 | 128 | 2 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 3 |
| 195 Atromitos | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 143 | 99 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 5 | 3 |
| 196 Volos | Xanthi | 1 | 0 | 139 | 106 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 197 Panetolike L | Larisa | 3 | 0 | 169 | 62 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 3 |
| 198 Aek | Aris | 2 | 2 | 168 | 128 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 199 Olympiake | Panathinai | 3 | 0 | 196 | 135 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 4 |
| 200 Paok | Ofi | 3 | 1 | 265 | 136 | 8 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 7 | 1 |
| 201 Xanthi | Panetolike | 1 | 1 | 142 | 123 | 10 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 3 |
| 202 Larisa | Volos | 3 | 1 | 149 | 95 | 6 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 3 |
| 203 Tripoli | Atromitos | 1 | 1 | 159 | 127 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 2 |
| 204 Lamia | Panionios | 0 | 1 | 54 | 101 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 205 Aek | Olympiake | 1 | 2 | 128 | 225 | 1 | 4 | 2 | 2 | 7 | 6 |
| 206 Aris | Paok | 0 | 2 | 138 | 178 | 2 | 7 | 0 | 1 | 9 | 4 |
| 207 Ofi | Panathinai | 0 | 0 | 170 | 132 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 1 |
| 208 Atromitos | Larisa | 3 | 0 | 212 | 104 | 9 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 1 |
| 209 Volos | Lamia | 0 | 0 | 117 | 102 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 0 |
| 210 Panetolike | Tripoli | 1 | 1 | 153 | 124 | 5 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 3 |
| 211 Panionios | Xanthi | 2 | 1 | 124 | 187 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 1 | 4 | 6 |
| 212 Panathinai | i Aris | 2 | 0 | 149 | 87 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 213 Olympiake |  | 2 | 1 | 204 | 151 | 5 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 5 | 3 |
| 214 Paok | Aek | 0 | 2 | 131 | 185 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 8 |


| 215 Aris A | Aek | 1 | 4 | 138 | 244 | 1 | 9 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 5 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 216 Ofi | Paok | 2 | 2 | 113 | 127 | 3 | 5 | 0 | 2 | 3 | 3 |
| 217 Panathinai | Olympiake | 0 | 0 | 121 | 135 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 218 Larisa | Panionios | 0 | 0 | 165 | 73 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 4 |
| 219 Tripoli | Volos | 4 | 0 | 198 | 140 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 1 |
| 220 Atromitos | Panetolike | 2 | 2 | 174 | 158 | 5 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 4 |
| 221 Lamia | Xanthi | 0 | 0 | 46 | 69 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 8 |
| 222 Aek | Ofi | 2 | 0 | 134 | 91 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 2 |
| 223 Aris | Olympiake | 2 | 4 | 210 | 185 | 5 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 6 |
| 224 Paok | Panathinai | 0 | 0 | 183 | 159 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| 225 Olympiake | Paok | 0 | 1 | 190 | 158 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 8 |
| 226 Ofi | Aris | 0 | 1 | 110 | 175 | 6 | 8 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 3 |
| 227 Panathinai | Aek | 1 | 3 | 162 | 158 | 6 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 3 |
| 228 Xanthi | Tripoli | 1 | 2 | 143 | 118 | 4 | 7 | 0 | 1 | 11 | 1 |
| 229 Volos | Atromitos | 2 | 3 | 188 | 210 | 5 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 4 |
| 230 Panionios | Panetolike | 0 | 2 | 136 | 221 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 5 | 5 |
| 231 Lamia | Larisa | 0 | 0 | 145 | 115 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 232 Aek | Paok | 0 | 0 | 156 | 138 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 4 |
| 233 Aris | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 135 | 206 | 8 | 9 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 3 |
| 234 Ofi | Olympiake | 1 | 3 | 113 | 169 | 3 | 8 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 4 |
| 235 Olympiake | Aek | 3 | 0 | 228 | 136 | 5 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 236 Panathinai | Ofi | 3 | 2 | 183 | 181 | 5 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 237 Paok | Aris | 0 | 0 | 140 | 126 | 7 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 3 |
| 238 Larisa | Xanthi | 0 | 0 | 115 | 110 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 4 |
| 239 Tripoli | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 171 | 119 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 3 |
| 240 Atromitos | Panionios | 0 | 0 | 198 | 133 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 13 | 3 |
| 241 Panetolike | Volos | 1 | 0 | 144 | 119 | 5 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 4 |
| 242 Aek | Olympiake | 1 | 1 | 122 | 143 | 2 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 9 | 4 |
| 243 Apollon | Giannena | 1 | 2 | 133 | 176 | 5 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 3 |
| 244 Aris | Lamia | 3 | 1 | 177 | 110 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 0 |
| 245 Tripoli | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 141 | 114 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 3 |
| 246 Atromitos | Volos | 0 | 2 | 121 | 140 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 2 |
| 247 Ofi | Panetolike | 1 | 1 | 112 | 138 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 2 |
| 248 Paok | Larisa | 1 | 0 | 192 | 105 | 7 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 3 |
| 249 Giannena | Larisa | 1 | 2 | 103 | 131 | 2 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 250 Volos A | Aris | 0 | 1 | 114 | 148 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 6 |
| 251 Olympiake | Tripoli | 3 | 0 | 255 | 153 | 8 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 5 |
| 252 Panathinai | Apollon | 1 | 0 | 104 | 83 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 4 |
| 253 Panetolike | Aek | 0 | 2 | 76 | 179 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 7 |
| 254 Paok | Atromitos | 1 | 1 | 203 | 123 | 6 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 3 |
| 255 Lamia | Ofi | 1 | 2 | 147 | 140 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 256 Aek | Lamia | 3 | 0 | 314 | 172 | 5 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 7 | 5 |
| 257 Larisa | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 101 | 127 | 1 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 258 Aris | Giannena | 2 | 2 | 162 | 141 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 3 |
| 259 Tripoli | Apollon | 0 | 0 | 169 | 128 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 9 |
| 260 Volos | Paok | 0 | 0 | 128 | 185 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 3 | 2 | 5 |
| 261 Olympiake | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 231 | 99 | 7 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 8 | 5 |
| 262 Ofi | Atromitos | 2 | 2 | 204 | 139 | 8 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 3 |
| 263 Giannena | Olympiake | 1 | 1 | 167 | 180 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 3 | 4 | 7 |
| 264 Apollon | Larisa | 1 | 0 | 116 | 107 | 3 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 6 |
| 265 Atromitos | Aek | 1 | 0 | 199 | 100 | 3 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 0 |
| 266 Panathinai | Aris | 0 | 1 | 105 | 130 | 5 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 2 |
| 267 Panetolike | Tripoli | 1 | 1 | 167 | 248 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 15 |
| 268 Paok | Ofi | 3 | 0 | 243 | 154 | 4 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 4 |
| 269 Lamia | Volos | 1 | 2 | 151 | 183 | 5 | 3 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 4 |
| 270 Aek | Paok | 1 | 1 | 107 | 183 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 3 | 2 | 2 |
| 271 Larisa | Tripoli | 1 | 3 | 151 | 212 | 5 | 5 | 1 | 2 | 5 | 5 |
| 272 Aris | Apollon | 1 | 0 | 158 | 86 | 6 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 4 |
| 273 Volos | Giannena | 2 | 1 | 166 | 117 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 4 |
| 274 Olympiake | Atromitos | 4 | 0 | 233 | 94 | 3 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 6 | 1 |
| 275 Ofi | Panathinai | 1 | 1 | 199 | 172 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 9 | 5 |
| 276 Lamia | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 99 | 119 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 3 |


| 277 Giannena | Aek | 0 | 1 | 120 | 119 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 3 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 278 Larisa | Aris | 0 | 3 | 129 | 194 | 2 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 6 |
| 279 Apollon | Lamia | 0 | 1 | 111 | 129 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 0 |
| 280 Tripoli | Ofi | 1 | 0 | 146 | 119 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 5 |
| 281 Atromitos | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 195 | 109 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 7 |
| 282 Panathinai | Volos | 1 | 1 | 159 | 145 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 9 | 5 |
| 283 Paok | Olympiake | 1 | 1 | 225 | 153 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 4 | 5 |
| 284 Aek | Ofi | 2 | 1 | 152 | 140 | 7 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| 285 Aris | Tripoli | 1 | 0 | 213 | 148 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 6 | 3 |
| 286 Atromitos | Giannena | 0 | 2 | 112 | 215 | 0 | 7 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 287 Volos | Larisa | 1 | 1 | 153 | 141 | 5 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 2 |
| 288 Olympiakc | Apollon | 2 | 0 | 236 | 163 | 4 | 5 | 3 | 0 | 11 | 7 |
| 289 Panetolike | Paok | 1 | 3 | 133 | 190 | 1 | 5 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 9 |
| 290 Lamia | Panathinai | 0 | 2 | 113 | 181 | 2 | 9 | 9 | 2 | 1 | 9 |
| 291 Giannena | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 114 | 96 | 5 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 2 |
| 292 Larisa | Lamia | 0 | 1 | 146 | 221 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 2 | 5 | 4 |
| 293 Apollon | Paok | 1 | 3 | 131 | 163 | 3 | 6 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 4 |
| 294 Aris | Aek | 0 | 1 | 118 | 143 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 1 |
| 295 Tripoli | Volos | 1 | 1 | 123 | 139 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 1 |
| 296 Ofi | Olympiake | 0 | 2 | 88 | 201 | 3 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 7 |
| 297 Panathinai | Atromitos | 0 | 1 | 100 | 156 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 298 Aek | Larisa | 4 | 1 | 167 | 226 | 8 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 11 | 2 |
| 299 Atromitos | Apollon | 2 | 2 | 152 | 140 | 6 | 1 | 1 | 2 | 13 | 2 |
| 300 Volos | Ofi | 1 | 4 | 133 | 151 | 6 | 5 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 5 |
| 301 Olympiake | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 234 | 84 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 3 | 5 |
| 302 Panetolikc | Aris | 0 | 1 | 158 | 129 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 4 |
| 303 Paok | Giannena | 2 | 1 | 298 | 144 | 8 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 13 | 1 |
| 304 Lamia | Tripoli | 2 | 2 | 117 | 129 | 5 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 305 Larisa | Atromitos | 0 | 0 | 91 | 91 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 3 |
| 306 Apollon | Volos | 3 | 3 | 228 | 182 | 11 | 3 | 3 | 1 | 2 | 8 |
| 307 Aris | Olvmsiake | 1 | 2 | 134 | 246 | 4 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 1 |
| 308 Tripoli | Aek | 1 | 2 | 162 | 126 | 1 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 2 |
| 309 Ofi | Giannena | 2 | 1 | 111 | 115 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 7 |
| 310 Panathinai | Panetolike | 2 | 1 | 130 | 100 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 3 |
| 311 Lamia | Paok | 0 | 2 | 115 | 163 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 3 |
| 312 Aek | Panathinai | 1 | 2 | 150 | 153 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 2 | 9 | 2 |
| 313 Giannena | Lamia | 2 | 0 | 181 | 86 | 4 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 10 | 4 |
| 314 Atromitos | Aris | 2 | 2 | 123 | 129 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 3 |
| 315 olympiako | Volos | 4 | 1 | 266 | 137 | 8 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 316 Ofi | Apollon | 0 | 2 | 198 | 160 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 7 | 4 |
| 317 Panetolike | Larisa | 2 | 1 | 144 | 141 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 7 |
| 318 Paok | Tripoli | 2 | 0 | 172 | 107 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 5 | 4 |
| 319 Larisa | Ofi | 0 | 1 | 122 | 178 | 0 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 5 |
| 320 Apollon | Aek | 3 | 4 | 200 | 205 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 7 |
| 321 Aris | Paok | 1 | 0 | 151 | 147 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 322 Tripoli | Atromitos | 2 | 0 | 237 | 118 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 3 |
| 323 Volos | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 143 | 97 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 10 | 4 |
| 324 Lamia | Olympiake | 0 | 6 | 104 | 252 | 4 | 4 | 0 | 3 | 3 | 9 |
| 325 Panathinai | Giannena | 2 | 0 | 137 | 112 | 2 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 5 | 1 |
| 326 Aek | Volos | 2 | 2 | 204 | 150 | 5 | 3 | 3 | 3 | 9 | 5 |
| 327 Giannena | Tripoli | 2 | 2 | 140 | 202 | 3 | 5 | 1 | 3 | 2 | 2 |
| 328 Atromitos | Lamia | 2 | 1 | 164 | 150 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 7 | 1 |
| 329 Olympiako | Larisa | 5 | 1 | 299 | 120 | 6 | 2 | 5 | 1 | 8 | 3 |
| 330 Ofi | Aris | 0 | 3 | 123 | 139 | 6 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 5 | 3 |
| 331 Panetolikc | Apollon | 0 | 1 | 100 | 121 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 2 |


| 332 Paok | Panathinai | 2 | 1 | 217 | 144 | 4 | 2 | 3 | 2 | 6 | 1 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 333 Giannena | Apollon | 1 | 3 | 128 | 144 | 3 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 2 |
| 334 Larisa | Paok | 1 | 1 | 123 | 210 | 1 | 10 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 12 |
| 335 Volos | Atromitos | 1 | 0 | 164 | 141 | 3 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 7 | 3 |
| 336 Olympiake | Aek | 3 | 0 | 145 | 109 | 5 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 1 |
| 337 Panathinai | Tripoli | 0 | 0 | 111 | 111 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 3 |
| 338 Panetolike | Ofi | 2 | 1 | 122 | 151 | 2 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 3 |
| 339 Lamia | Aris | 2 | 0 | 142 | 113 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 5 |
| 340 Aek | Panetolike | 1 | 0 | 160 | 83 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 341 Larisa | Giannena | 0 | 0 | 155 | 117 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 342 Apollon | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 164 | 121 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 3 |
| 343 Aris | Volos | 2 | 0 | 223 | 119 | 10 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 3 |
| 344 Tripoli | Olympiake | 0 | 4 | 98 | 260 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 2 |
| 345 Atromitos | Paok | 3 | 2 | 188 | 170 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 4 |
| 346 Ofi | Lamia | 2 | 0 | 175 | 94 | 5 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 1 |
| 347 Giannena | Aris | 0 | 0 | 111 | 131 | 5 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 7 |
| 348 Apollon | Tripoli | 0 | 1 | 152 | 110 | 3 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 3 |
| 349 Atromitos | Ofi | 0 | 0 | 184 | 162 | 8 | 7 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 7 |
| 350 Panathinai | Larisa | 2 | 0 | 179 | 164 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 4 |
| 351 Panetolike | Olympiake | 1 | 2 | 121 | 190 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 5 |
| 352 Paok | volos | 3 | 1 | 228 | 155 | 10 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 5 | 3 |
| 353 Lamia | Aek | 0 | 1 | 104 | 178 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 2 |
| 354 Aek | Atromitos | 2 | 1 | 166 | 78 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| 355 Larisa | Apollon | 0 | 1 | 132 | 139 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 6 |
| 356 Aris | Panathinai | 0 | 1 | 306 | 194 | 14 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 9 | 0 |
| 357 Tripoli | Panetolike | 2 | 0 | 234 | 111 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 1 |
| 358 volos | Lamia | 1 | 1 | 193 | 191 | 6 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 6 | 3 |
| 359 Olympiake | Giannena | 1 | 0 | 209 | 115 | 8 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 8 | 2 |
| 360 Ofi | Paok | 0 | 3 | 106 | 257 | 0 | 9 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 6 |
| 361 Giannena | Volos | 0 | 1 | 138 | 97 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 5 | 1 |
| 362 Apollon | Aris | 0 | 1 | 111 | 190 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 3 | 1 | 6 |
| 363 Tripoli | Larisa | 1 | 0 | 169 | 87 | 3 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 3 |
| 364 Atromitos | Olympiake | 0 | 1 | 133 | 198 | 0 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 5 |
| 365 Panathinai | Ofi | 2 | 0 | 172 | 173 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 3 |
| 366 Panetolikc | Lamia | 0 | 0 | 131 | 142 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 7 |
| 367 Paok | Aek | 2 | 2 | 175 | 193 | 4 | 2 | 2 | 3 | 7 | 4 |
| 368 Aek | Giannena | 0 | 2 | 137 | 120 | 2 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 2 |
| 369 Aris | Larisa | 1 | 0 | 201 | 121 | 5 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 4 |
| 370 Volos | Panathinai | 0 | 2 | 162 | 118 | 5 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 10 | 2 |
| 371 Olympiake | Paok | 3 | 0 | 213 | 143 | 8 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 4 |
| 372 Ofi | Tripoli | 0 | 1 | 195 | 104 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| 373 Panetolikc | Atromitos | 1 | 1 | 147 | 132 | 4 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 6 | 2 |
| 374 Lamia | Apollon | 1 | 0 | 163 | 96 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 2 |
| 375 Giannena | Atromitos | 0 | 1 | 126 | 134 | 2 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 9 | 1 |
| 376 Larisa | Volos | 0 | 0 | 119 | 150 | 0 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 10 |
| 377 Apollon | Olympiakc | 1 | 3 | 96 | 259 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 9 |
| 378 Tripoli | Aris | 2 | 1 | 174 | 170 | 1 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 7 |
| 379 Ofi | Aek | 0 | 2 | 110 | 153 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 6 |
| 380 Panathinai | Lamia | 0 | 0 | 155 | 141 | 6 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 8 | 2 |
| 381 Paok | Panetolike | 5 | 0 | 230 | 94 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 0 | 4 | 5 |
| 382 Aek | Aris | 0 | 2 | 135 | 175 | 3 | 3 | 0 | 3 | 4 | 3 |
| 383 Atromitos | Panathinai | 2 | 3 | 197 | 153 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 6 | 6 |
| 384 Volos | Tripoli | 0 | 1 | 130 | 147 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 0 |
| 385 Olympiakc |  | 3 | 0 | 287 | 114 | 10 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 7 | 1 |
| 386 Panetolikc | Giannena | 1 | 2 | 142 | 134 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 4 | 5 |
| 387 Paok | Apollon | 2 | 2 | 233 | 160 | 6 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 15 | 2 |
| 388 Lamia | Larisa | 2 | 1 | 127 | 108 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 2 |
| 389 Giannena | Paok | 0 | 2 | 123 | 209 | 1 | 7 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 7 |
| 390 Larisa | Aek | 2 | 4 | 144 | 239 | 5 | 6 | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 |
| 391 Apollon | Atromitos | 2 | 1 | 156 | 187 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 2 | 1 | 3 |
| 392 Aris | Panetolike | 0 | 0 | 162 | 120 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 7 | 2 |


| 393 Tripoli | Lamia | 0 | 0 | 202 | 149 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 11 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 394 Ofi | Volos | 1 | 2 | 113 | 150 | 4 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 3 |
| 395 Panathinai | Olympiake | 2 | 1 | 177 | 262 | 1 | 5 | 1 | 3 | 4 |
| 396 Aek | Tripoli | 2 | 2 | 253 | 188 | 10 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 7 |
| 397 Giannena | Ofi | 1 | 0 | 173 | 118 | 2 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 3 |
| 398 Atromitos L | Larisa | 1 | 1 | 224 | 158 | 3 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 399 Volos | Apollon | 2 | 0 | 190 | 147 | 8 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 2 |
| 400 Olympiake |  | 1 | 1 | 182 | 186 | 2 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 10 |
| 401 Panetolike | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 116 | 162 | 2 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 2 |
| 402 Paok | Lamia | 4 | 0 | 312 | 95 | 10 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 4 |
| 403 Larisa | Panetolike | 1 | 0 | 162 | 148 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 6 |
| 404 Apollon | Ofi | 2 | 1 | 201 | 201 | 3 | 5 | 2 | 0 | 5 |
| 405 Aris | Atromitos | 3 | 0 | 216 | 142 | 5 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 5 |
| 406 Tripoli | Paok | 2 | 1 | 174 | 197 | 5 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 2 |
| 407 Volos | Olympiakc | 1 | 2 | 139 | 163 | 1 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 408 Panathinai | Aek | 1 | 1 | 149 | 161 | 2 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 4 |
| 409 Lamia | Giannena | 0 | 0 | 127 | 105 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 |
| 410 Aek | Apollon | 2 | 0 | 206 | 96 | 6 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 4 |
| 411 Giannena | Panathinai | 1 | 0 | 156 | 127 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 412 Atromitos | Tripoli | 1 | 1 | 148 | 152 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 413 Olympiake | Lamia | 3 | 0 | 237 | 107 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 6 |
| 414 Ofi | Larisa | 2 | 3 | 137 | 140 | 2 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 415 Panetolike | Volos | 1 | 0 | 146 | 149 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 0 | 1 |
| 416 Paok | Aris | 2 | 2 | 202 | 186 | 6 | 5 | 2 | 1 | 7 |
| 417 Larisa | Olympiake | 1 | 3 | 186 | 228 | 4 | 4 | 1 | 1 | 2 |
| 418 Apollon | Panetolike | 1 | 0 | 157 | 145 | 2 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 3 |
| 419 Aris | Ofi | 1 | 0 | 182 | 120 | 5 | 2 | 2 | 0 | 7 |
| 420 Tripoli | Giannena | 0 | 1 | 106 | 148 | 3 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 5 |
| 421 Volos | Aek | 1 | 0 | 120 | 106 | 3 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 4 |
| 422 Panathinai | Paok | 2 | 1 | 163 | 215 | 2 | 6 | 1 | 2 | 1 |
| 423 Lamia A | Atromitos | 0 | 0 | 138 | 146 | 2 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 5 |

## A2. R-Code

## Function bivpois.table

```
"bivpois.table" <-
function(x, y, lambda = c(1, 1, 1))
{
```

```
    j<-0
    n <- length(x)
    maxy <- c(max(x), max(y)) #Set initial values for
parameters
    lambda1 <- lambda[1]
    lambda2 <- lambda[2]
    lambda3 <- lambda[3]
    if((x == 0) | (y == 0)) {
    prob <- matrix(NA, nrow = maxy[1] + 1, ncol =
maxy[2]+1, byrow = T)
            prob[maxy[1] + 1, maxy[2] + 1] <- exp( - lambda3) *
                        dpois(x[j], lambda1[j]) * dpois(y[j],
lambda2[j])
```

```
        else {
        prob <- matrix(NA, nrow = maxy[1] + 1, ncol =
maxy[2]+1, byrow = T)
                k <- 1
                m <- 1
                prob[k, m] <- exp( - lambda1 - lambda2 - lambda3)
                for(i in 2:(maxy[1] + 1)) {
                prob[i, 1] <- (prob[i - 1, 1] * lambda1)/(i -
```

1) 
```
}
for(j in 2:(maxy[2] + 1)) {
    prob[1, j] <- (prob[1, j - 1] * lambda2)/(j -
```

1)      \}
     for \((j\) in 2: \((\operatorname{maxy}[2]+1))\) \{
         for(i in 2:(maxy[1] + 1)) \{
             \(\operatorname{prob}[i, j]<-(l a m b d a 1 ~ * ~ p r o b[i ~-~ 1, ~ j] ~+~\)
                 lambda3 * prob[i - 1, j - 1])/(i - 1)
             \}
    \}
\}
result <- prob
result
\}

## Function Im.bp

"lm.bp" <-
function( 11, 12, l112=NULL, 13=~1, data, common.intercept=FALSE, zeroL3=FALSE, maxit=300, pres=1e-8, verbose=getOption('verbose') )
\#
\{
options(warn=-1)
\#
\# definition of function call
templist<-list $\quad 11=11, \quad 12=12, \quad 1112=1112, \quad 13=13$, data=substitute(data), common.intercept=common.intercept, zeroL3=zeroL3, maxit=maxit, pres=pres, verbose=verbose)
tempcall<-as.call( c(expression(lm.bp), templist))
rm(templist)

```
# l1 : formula for the first
linear predictor (of lambda1)
# 12 : formula for the second
linear predictor (of lambda2)
# l112 : formula for common variables
on both lambda1 and lambda2
# 13 : formula for the third first
linear predictor/covariance parameter (lambda3)
# common.intercept: logical argument defining whether common
intercept should be used for lamdba1,lambda2
#
# data : data.frame which contains data {required
arguement}
# zeroL3 : Logical argument controlling whether lambda3 is
zero (DblPoisson) or not
# maxit : maximum number of iterations
# pres : precision of the relative likelihood difference
after which EM stops
# verbose : Logical argument controlling whether beta
parameters will we
# printed while EM runs. Default value is taken
options()$verbose value.
#--------------------------------------------------------------------
#
#
#
# set common or noncommon intercept
if (common.intercept){ formula1.terms<-'1' }
else {formula1.terms<-'internal.data1$noncommon' }
#
#
namex<-as.character(11[2])
namey<-as.character(12[2])
x<-data[,names(data)==namex]
y<-data[,names(data)==namey]
#
# Data length
n<-length(x)
lengthpvec<-1
#
#
#
# initial values
```

```
s<-rep(0,n)
like<-1:n*0
zero<- ( x==0 )|( y==0 )
if (zeroL3) { lambda3<-rep(0,n) }
else { lambda3<-rep( max(0.1,
cov(x,y,use='complete.obs')), n) }
#
#
# form dataframes used
# data1 includes modelling on lambda1 and lambda2
# data2 includes modelling on lambda3
# internal.data1 and internal.data2 are data frames used for
additional internal variables
#
internal.data1<-data.frame( y1y2=c( x, y) )
internal.data2<-data.frame( y3 = rep(0, n ) )
#
p<-length(as.data.frame(data))
data1<-rbind(data, data)
names(data1)<-names(data)
#
# removing x and y
data1<-data1[ , names(data1)!=namex]
data1<-data1[ , names(data1)!=namey]
#
#
# define full model
if (as.character(l1[3])=='.') { l1<-formula( paste(
as.character(l1[2]), paste( names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep=''
), sep='~') ) }
if (as.character(l2[3])=='.') { l2<-formula( paste(
as.character(l2[2]), paste( names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep=''
), sep='~') ) }
if (as.character(13[2])=='.') { l3<-formula( paste( '', paste(
names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep='' ) , sep='~') ) }
#
# define the formula used for covariance term
formula2<-
formula(paste('internal.data2$y3~',as.character(l3[2]), sep=''))
#
internal.data1$noncommon<- as.factor(c(1:n*0,1:n*0+1))
contrasts(internal.data1$noncommon)<-contr.treatment(2, base=1)
internal.data1$indct1<-c(1:n*0+1,1:n*0 )
internal.data1$indct2<-c(1:n*0 ,1:n*0+1)
```

```
#
#
if (!zeroL3){
    data2<-data1[1:n,]
    names(data2)<-names(data1)
    }
#
#####
#
# add the common terms
#
if ( !is.null(l112) ) {
    formula1.terms<-paste( formula1.terms,
as.character(l112[2]),sep='+')
    }
#
# add the special common terms (if any)
#
#
#
# in this section we identify non-common parameters
# if a variable X is common in all formulas the we use term
x*noncommon to include x+x:noncommon terms
# otherwise use I(internal.data1$indct1*x) to add sepererate
parameter on lambda1
#
templ1<- labels(terms(l1))
#
# run this only if there are terms in l1 formula
if (length( templ1 )>0){
    for ( k1 in 1:length( templ1 ) ){
        if ( !is.null(l112) ) { checkvar1<-
sum(labels(terms(l1l2))==templ1[k1] )==1 }
    else{ checkvar1<-FALSE }
    checkvar2<-sum(labels(terms(l2))==templ1[k1] )==1
    if (checkvar1&checkvar2) {formula1.terms<-
paste(formula1.terms,
paste('internal.data1$noncommon*',templ1[k1],sep=''), sep='+')
    }
        else{
        formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
paste('+I(internal.data1$indct1*',templ1[k1],sep=''), sep='')
```

formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,

```
')',sep='')
    }
    }
}
#
# if a variable X is not common st
# otherwise use I(internal.data1$indct1*x) to add sepererate
parameter on lambda1
#
templ2<- labels(terms(l2))
#
# run this only if there are terms in l1 formula
if (length( templ2 )>0){
    for ( k1 in 1:length( templ2 ) ){
        if ( !is.null(l112) ) {checkvar1<-
(sum(labels(terms(l1l2))==templ2[k1]
)+sum(labels(terms(l1))==templ2[k1] ))!=2 }
                else{ checkvar1<-TRUE }
        if ( checkvar1 ) {
                            formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
paste('+I(internal.data1$indct2*',templ2[k1],sep=''), sep='')
                                    formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
')',sep='')
                                    }
    }
}
#
rm(templ1)
rm(templ2)
rm(Checkvar1)
rm(Checkvar2)
#
#
#
#
#
#
# This bit creates labels for special terms of type c(x1,x2)
used in l1l2
#
#
formula1<-
formula(paste('internal.data1$y1y2~',formula1.terms, sep=''))
```

```
tmpform1<-as.character(formula1[3])
newformula<-formula1
while( regexpr('c\\(',tmpform1) != -1)
{
    temppos1<-regexpr('c\\(',tmpform1)[1]
    tempfor <-substring( tmpform1, first = temppos1+ 2 )
    temppos2<-regexpr('\\)' , tempfor)[1]
    tempvar <-substring( tempfor , first = 1, last =
temppos2-1 )
    temppos3<-regexpr(', ' , tempvar)[1]
    tempname1<-substring(tempfor , first = 1, last =
temppos3-1 )
    tempname2<-substring(tempfor , first = temppos3+2,
last=temppos2-1)
    tempname2<-sub( '\\)','', tempname2 )
    tempvar1<-data[, names(data)==tempname1]
    tempvar2<-data[, names(data)==tempname2]
    data1$newvar1<-c(tempvar1, tempvar2)
#
    if( is.factor(tempvar1)& is.factor(tempvar2) ){
                data1$newvar1<-as.factor(data1$newvar1)
                if (all(levels(tempvar1)==levels(tempvar2))){
                    attributes(data1$newvar1)<-
attributes(tempvar1)}
    }
    tempvar<-sub( ', ', '..', tempvar )
    names(data1)[names(data1)=='newvar1']<-tempvar
    newformula<-sub( 'c\\(','', tmpform1 )
    newformula<-sub( '\\)','', newformula )
    newformula<-sub( ', ' , '..', newformula )
    tmpform1<-newformula
    formula1<-
formula(paste('internal.data1$y1y2~',newformula,sep=''))
}
#####
rm(temppos1)
rm(temppos2)
rm(temppos3)
rm(tmpform1)
rm(tempfor)
rm(tempvar)
rm(tempvar1)
rm(tempvar2)
rm(tempname1)
```

```
rm(tempname2)
#
#
# Initial values for lambda
#
lambda<-glm(formula1,family=poisson, data=data1)$fitted
#
lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]
#
difllike<-100.0
loglike0<-1000.0
i<-0
#
# fitting the Double Poisson Model
if (zeroL3) {
        #
        # fit the double Poisson model
        y0<-c(x,y)
        m<-glm( formula1, family=poisson, data=data1 )
        p3<-length(m$coef)
        beta<-m$coef
# ---------------------------------------------------
# creating names for parameters
#
    names(beta)<-newnamesbeta( beta )
#
# end of name creations (l1, l2, l2-11, blank)
#
    betaparameters<-splitbeta( beta )
#
    lambda<-fitted(m)
    lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
    lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]
    like<-dpois(x, lambda1) * dpois( y, lambda2 )
    loglike<-sum(log(like))
#
# calculation of BIC and AIC for bivpoisson model
noparams<- m$rank
AIC<- -2*loglike + noparams * 2
BIC<- -2*loglike + noparams * log(2*n)
#
#
# Calculation of BIC, AIC of Poisson saturated model
```

        x.mean<-x
        x.mean[x==0]<-1e-12
        y.mean<-y
        y.mean[y==0]<-1e-12
        AIC.sat <- sum(log( dpois( x , x.mean ) ) + log( dpois(
    y , y.mean ) ))
BIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* log(2*n)
AIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* 2

# 

# 

    AICtotal<-c(AIC.sat, AIC);
    BICtotal<-c(BIC.sat, BIC );
    names(AICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'DblPois')
    names(BICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'DblPois')
    
# 

# putting all betas in one vector

    allbeta<-c(betaparameters$beta1,betaparameters$beta2)
    names(allbeta)<-c( paste( '(l1):',
    names(betaparameters$beta1), sep='' ),paste('(l2):',
names(betaparameters$beta2), sep='' ) )
result<-list(coefficients=allbeta,
fitted.values=data.frame(x=m$fitted[1:n],y=m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)
]),
residuals=data.frame(x=x-m$fitted[1:n],y=y-
m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)]),
beta1=betaparameters$beta1, beta2=betaparameters$beta2,
lambda1=m$fitted[1:n], lambda2=m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)],
lambda3=0, loglikelihood=loglike, iterations=1,
parameters=noparams, AIC=AICtotal, BIC=BICtotal, call=tempcall)
}
else {
loglike<-rep(0,maxit)
while ( (difllike>pres) \&\& (i <= maxit) ) {
i<-i+1
\#\#\#\#\# E step \#\#\#\#\#\#
for (j in 1:n) {
if (zero[j]) {
s[j]<-0.0;
like[j]<- log(dpois(x[j],
lambda1[j]))+log(dpois(y[j],lambda2[j]))
lambda3[j];

```
    else \{
```

        lbp1<-pbivpois(x[j]-1,
    1,lambda=c(lambda1[j],lambda2[j],lambda3[j]), log=TRUE);
lbp2<-pbivpois(x[j]
y[j]
,lambda=c(lambda1[j],lambda2[j],lambda3[j]), log=TRUE);

# 

            s[j]<-exp(log(lambda3[j])+lbp1-lbp2);
            like[j]<-lbp2;
        }
    }
    ##### end of E step ######
    x1<-x-s
    x2<-y-s
    x1[ (x1<0)&(x1>-1.0e-8)]<-0.00
    x2[(x2<0)&(x2>-1.0e-8)]<-0.00
    loglike[i]<-sum(like)
    difllike<-abs( (loglike0-loglike[i])/loglike0 )
    loglike0<-loglike[i]
    #
    #
    ##### M step ######
    #
    # fit model on lambda3
    internal.data2$y3<-s
    m0<-glm( formula2, family=poisson, data=data2 )
    beta3<-m0$coef
    lambda3<-m0$fitted
    #
    # fit model on lambda1 & lambda2
    internal.data1$y1y2<-c(x1,x2)
    m<-glm( formula1, family=poisson, data=data1 )
    p3<-length(m$coef)
    beta<-m$coef
    
# creating names for parameters

    names(beta)<-newnamesbeta( beta )
    
# 

# 

lambda<-fitted(m)
lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]

##### end of M step

```
```


# 

# detailed or compressed printing during the EM iterations

        if (verbose) {
        printvector<-c( i, beta, beta3,loglike[i], difllike
    )
names(printvector)<-c( 'iter', names(beta),
paste('(l3):',names(beta3),sep=''), 'loglike',
'Rel.Dif.loglike')}
else {
printvector<-c( i, loglike[i], difllike )
names(printvector)<-c( 'iter', 'loglike',
'Rel.Dif.loglike')}

# 

    lengthpvec<-length(printvector)
    print.default( printvector, digits=4 )
        }
    
# 

# calculation of BIC and AIC for bivpoisson model

        noparams<- m$rank + m0$rank
        AIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * 2
        BIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * log(2*n)
    
# 

# 

# Calculation of BIC, AIC of Poisson saturated model

        x.mean<-x
        x.mean[x==0]<-1e-12
        y.mean<-y
        y.mean[y==0]<-1e-12
        AIC.sat <- sum(log( dpois( x , x.mean ) ) + log( dpois(
    y , y.mean ) ))
BIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* log(2*n)
AIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* 2

# 

# 

    AICtotal<-c(AIC.sat, AIC);
    BICtotal<-c(BIC.sat, BIC );
    names(AICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'BivPois')
    names(BICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'BivPois')
    
# 

# spliting parameter vector

    betaparameters<-splitbeta( beta )
    
# 

# putting all betas in one vector

```
```

    allbeta<-c(betaparameters$beta1,betaparameters$beta2,
    beta3)
names(allbeta)<-c(
names(betaparameters$beta1),
names(betaparameters$beta2),
names(beta3), sep='' ) )

# 

# Calculation of output

    result<-list(coefficients=allbeta,
    fitted.values=data.frame(x=m$fitted[1:n]+lambda3,y=m$fitted[(n+
1):(2*n)]+lambda3),
residuals=data.frame(x=x-m$fitted[1:n]-lambda3, }\textrm{y}=\textrm{y}
m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)]-lambda3),
beta1=betaparameters$beta1, beta2=betaparameters$beta2,
beta3=beta3,
lambda2=m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)], lambda3=lambda3,
                                lambda1=m$fitted[1:n],
loglikelihood=loglike[1:i], parameters=noparams, AIC=AICtotal,
BIC=BICtotal,iterations=i, call=tempcall )

# 

# 

} \# end of elseif
options(warn=0)

# 

class(result)<-c('lm.bp', 'lm')
result

# 

# 

}

```

\section*{Function pbivpois}
```

"pbivpois" <-
function(x, y=NULL, lambda = c(1, 1, 1), log=FALSE) {

```
```

if ( is.matrix(x) ) {

```
if ( is.matrix(x) ) {
    var1<-x[,1]
    var1<-x[,1]
    var2<-x[,2]
    var2<-x[,2]
}
}
else if (is.vector(x)&is.vector(y)){
else if (is.vector(x)&is.vector(y)){
    if (length(x)==length(y)){
    if (length(x)==length(y)){
                var1<-x
                var1<-x
                var2<-y
```

                var2<-y
    ```
```

        }
        else{
            stop('lengths of x and y are not equal')
        }
    }
    else{
        stop('x is not a matrix or x and y are not vectors')
    }
    n <- length(var1)
    logbp<-vector(length=n)
    
# 

    for (k in 1:n){
        x0<-var1[k]
        y0<-var2[k]
        xymin<-min( x0,y0 )
        lambdaratio<-lambda[3]/(lambda[1]*lambda[2])
    
# 

    i<-0:xymin
        sums<- -lgamma(var1[k]-i+1)-lgamma(i+1)-
    lgamma(var2[k]-i+1)+i*log(lambdaratio)
maxsums <- max(sums)
sums<- sums - maxsums
logsummation<- log( sum(exp(sums)) ) + maxsums
logbp[k]<- -sum(lambda) + var1[k] * log( lambda[1] )

+ var2[k] * log( lambda[2] ) + logsummation
}
if (log) { result<- logbp }
else { result<-exp(logbp) }
result


# end of function bivpois

}

```

\section*{Function Im.dibp}
"lm.dibp" <function
( 11, 12, 1112=NULL, \(13=\sim 1\), data, common.intercept=FALSE, zeroL3=FALSE, distribution='discrete', jmax=2,maxit=300, pres=1e-8, verbose=getOption('verbose') )
\{
options(warn=-1)
\#
\# definition of function call
```

templist<-list( l1=11, l2=12, l112=1112, l3=13,
data=substitute(data), common.intercept=common.intercept,
zeroL3=zeroL3, distribution=distribution, jmax=jmax,
maxit=maxit, pres=pres, verbose=verbose)
tempcall<-as.call( c(expression(lm.dibp), templist))
rm(templist)

# 

# PARAMETERS COMMON WITH lm.bp

# l1 : formula for the first

linear predictor (of lambda1)

# 12 : formula for the second

linear predictor (of lambda2)

# l112 : formula for common variables

on both lambda1 and lambda2

# 13 : formula for the third first

linear predictor/covariance parameter (lambda3)

# common.intercept: logical argument defining whether common

intercept should be used for lamdba1,lambda2

# 

# data : data.frame which contains data {required

arguement}

# zeroL3 : Logical argument controlling whether lambda3 is

zero (DblPoisson) or not

# maxit : maximum number of iterations

# pres : precision of the relative likelihood difference

after which EM stops

# verbose : Logical argument controlling whether beta

parameters will we

# printed while EM runs. Default value is taken

options()\$verbose value.

# 

# PARAMETERS ADDITIONAL TO lm.bp

# distribution : Selection of diagonal inflation distribution.

# Three choices are available:

# ='discrete' : Discrete, jmax is the number of

diagonal elements [0,1,...,]

# ='poisson' : Poisson with mean theta.

# ='geometrics': Geometric with success

probability theta.

# Default is DISCRETE(2). theta[1] and theta[2]

stand for theta_1, theta_2

# while theta_0=1-

theta[1]-theta[2].

```
```


# jmax : Used only for DISCRETE diagonal distribution

(distribution='discrete').

# 

                    Indicates the number of parameters of the
    DISCRETE distribution.

```
```


# 

```
#
# set common or noncommon intercept
# set common or noncommon intercept
if (common.intercept){ formula1.terms<-'1' }
if (common.intercept){ formula1.terms<-'1' }
else {formula1.terms<-'internal.data1$noncommon' }
else {formula1.terms<-'internal.data1$noncommon' }
#
#
#
#
namex<-as.character(11[2])
namex<-as.character(11[2])
namey<-as.character(12[2])
namey<-as.character(12[2])
x<-data[,names(data)==namex]
x<-data[,names(data)==namex]
y<-data[,names(data)==namey]
y<-data[,names(data)==namey]
#
#
#
#
# Data length
# Data length
n<-length(x)
n<-length(x)
lengthprintvec<-1
lengthprintvec<-1
#
#
#
#
#
#
# definition of diagonal inflated distribution
# definition of diagonal inflated distribution
    maxy<-max(c(x,y))
    maxy<-max(c(x,y))
#
#
# changing distribution to codes 1,2,3
# changing distribution to codes 1,2,3
    dist<-distribution
    dist<-distribution
    if ( charmatch( dist, 'poisson' , nomatch=0) ==1 )
    if ( charmatch( dist, 'poisson' , nomatch=0) ==1 )
{distribution<-2}
{distribution<-2}
    else if ( charmatch( dist, 'geometric', nomatch=0) ==1 )
    else if ( charmatch( dist, 'geometric', nomatch=0) ==1 )
{distribution<-3}
{distribution<-3}
    else if ( charmatch( dist, 'discrete' , nomatch=0) ==1 )
    else if ( charmatch( dist, 'discrete' , nomatch=0) ==1 )
{distribution<-1}
{distribution<-1}
        if ( distribution==1 ){
        if ( distribution==1 ){
                        dilabel<-paste('Inflation Distribution:
                        dilabel<-paste('Inflation Distribution:
Discrete with J=',jmax)
                            if (jmax==0) {theta<-0}
                                    else { theta<-1:jmax*0+1/(jmax+1) }
                                    di.f<-function (x, theta){
                                    JMAX<-length(theta)
                                    if (x>JMAX) { res<-0 }
                                    else if (x==0) {res<-1-sum(theta) }
                                    else { res<-theta[x] }
res
```

```
        }
    }
    else if ( distribution==2 ){
                        dilabel<-'Inflation Distribution: Poisson'
                        theta<-1.0;
                        di.f<-function (x, theta){
                                    if (theta>0) { res<-
dpois( x, theta ) }
                                    else {
                                    if (x==0) { res<-1}
                                    else {res<-1e-12}
                                    }
        }
    }
    else if ( distribution==3 ){
        dilabel<-'Inflation Distribution: Geometric'
        theta<-0.5;
        di.f<-function (x, theta){
                                    if (theta>0) {
                                    if(theta==1)
{theta<-0.9999999}
theta ) }
    else if (theta==1){
                                    if (x==0) { res<-1}
                                    else {res<-1e-12}
    }
    else {res<-1e-12}
                                    }
    }
    else {
        stop(paste(distribution, 'Not known distribution.',
sep=': '))
    }
# ------
# setting up data frames, vectors and data
#
# form dataframes used
# data1 includes modelling on lambda1 and lambda2
# data2 includes modelling on lambda3
# internal.data1 and internal.data2 are data frames used for
additional internal variables
#
internal.data1<-data.frame( y1y2=c( x, y) )
```

```
internal.data2<-data.frame( y3 = rep(0, n ) )
#
p<-length(as.data.frame(data))
data1<-rbind(data, data)
names(data1)<-names(data)
#
# removing x and y
data1<-data1[ , names(data1)!=namex]
data1<-data1[ , names(data1)!=namey]
#
#
#
# define full model
if (as.character(l1[3])=='.') { l1<-formula( paste(
as.character(l1[2]), paste( names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep=''
), sep='~') ) }
if (as.character(12[3])=='.') { l2<-formula( paste(
as.character(l2[2]), paste( names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep=''
), sep='~') ) }
if (as.character(13[2])=='.') { l3<-formula( paste( '', paste(
names(data1),'',collapse='+',sep='' ) , sep='~') ) }
#
# define the formula used for covariance term
formula2<-
formula(paste('internal.data2$y3~',as.character(l3[2]), sep=''))
#
internal.data1$noncommon<- as.factor(c(1:n*0,1:n*0+1))
contrasts(internal.data1$noncommon)<-contr.treatment(2, base=1)
internal.data1$indct1<-c(1:n*0+1,1:n*0 )
internal.data1$indct2<-c(1:n*0 ,1:n*0+1)
#
#
if (!zeroL3){
    data2<-data1[1:n,]
    names(data2)<-names(data1)
    }
#####
#
# add the common terms
#
if ( !is.null(l112) ) {
    formula1.terms<-paste( formula1.terms,
as.character(1112[2]), sep='+')
    }
```

```
#
# add the special common terms (if any)
# in this section we identify non-common parameters
# if a variable X is common in all formulas the we use term
x*noncommon to include x+x:noncommon terms
# otherwise use I(internal.data1$indct1*x) to add sepererate
parameter on lambda1
#
templ1<- labels(terms(l1))
#
# run this only if there are terms in l1 formula
if (length( templ1 )>0){
    for ( k1 in 1:length( templ1 ) ){
    if ( !is.null(l1l2) ) { checkvar1<-
sum(labels(terms(l1l2))==templ1[k1] )==1 }
    else{ checkvar1<-FALSE }
    checkvar2<-sum(labels(terms(l2))==templ1[k1] )==1
    if (checkvar1&checkvar2) {formula1.terms<-
paste(formula1.terms,
paste('internal.data1$noncommon*',templ1[k1],sep=''), sep='+')
    }
        else{
                            formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
paste('+I(internal.data1$indct1*',templ1[k1],sep=''), sep='')
                            formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
')',sep='')
                                    }
    }
}
#
# if a variable X is not common st
# otherwise use I(internal.data1$indct1*x) to add sepererate
parameter on lambda1
#
templ2<- labels(terms(l2))
#
# run this only if there are terms in l1 formula
if (length( templ2 )>0){
    for ( k1 in 1:length( templ2 ) ){
    if ( !is.null(l112) ) {checkvar1<-
(sum(labels(terms(l1l2))==templ2[k1]
)+sum(labels(terms(l1))==templ2[k1] ))!=2 }
    else{ checkvar1<-TRUE }
```

```
            if ( checkvar1 ) {
                            formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
paste('+I(internal.data1$indct2*',templ2[k1],sep=''), sep='')
                            formula1.terms<-paste(formula1.terms,
')',sep='')
                                    }
    }
}
#
rm(templ1)
rm(templ2)
rm(Checkvar1)
rm(Checkvar2)
#
# This bit creates labels for special terms of type c(x1,x2)
used in l1l2
#
#
formula1<-
formula(paste('internal.data1$y1y2~',formula1.terms, sep=''))
tmpform1<-as.character(formula1[3])
newformula<-formula1
while( regexpr('c\\(',tmpform1) != -1)
{
    temppos1<-regexpr('c\\(',tmpform1)[1]
    tempfor <-substring( tmpform1, first = temppos1+ 2 )
    temppos2<-regexpr('\\)' , tempfor)[1]
    tempvar <-substring( tempfor , first = 1, last =
temppos2-1 )
    temppos3<-regexpr(', ' , tempvar)[1]
    tempname1<-substring(tempfor , first = 1, last =
temppos3-1 )
    tempname2<-substring(tempfor , first = temppos3+2,
last=temppos2-1)
    tempname2<-sub( '\\)','', tempname2 )
    tempvar1<-data[, names(data)==tempname1]
    tempvar2<-data[, names(data)==tempname2]
    data1$newvar1<-c(tempvar1, tempvar2)
#
    if( is.factor(tempvar1)& is.factor(tempvar2) ){
        data1$newvar1<-as.factor(data1$newvar1)
        if (all(levels(tempvar1)==levels(tempvar2))){
            attributes(data1$newvar1)<-
attributes(tempvar1)}
```

```
}
tempvar<-sub( ', ' , '..', tempvar )
names(data1)[names(data1)=='newvar1']<-tempvar
newformula<-sub( 'c\\(','', tmpform1 )
newformula<-sub( '\\)','', newformula )
newformula<-sub( ', ' , '..', newformula )
tmpform1<-newformula
formula1<-
formula(paste('internal.data1$y1y2~',newformula,sep=''))
}
#####
rm(temppos1)
rm(temppos2)
rm(temppos3)
rm(tmpform1)
rm(tempfor)
rm(tempvar)
rm(tempvar1)
rm(tempvar2)
rm(tempname1)
rm(tempname2)
# ------
# initial values for parameters
prob<-0.20
s<-rep(0,n)
vi<-1:n*0
v1<-1-c(vi,vi)
like<-1:n*0
zero<- ( x==0 )|( y==0 )
if (zeroL3) { lambda3<-rep(0,n) }
else { lambda3<-rep( max(0.1,
cov(x,y,use='complete.obs')), n) }
#
#
#
#
# Initial values for lambda
internal.data1$v1<-1-c(vi,vi);
lambda<-glm( formula1, family=poisson, data=data1,
weights=internal.data1$v1, maxit=100)$fitted
#
lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
```

```
lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]
#
difllike<-100.0
loglike0<-1000.0
i<-0
ii<-0
if (zeroL3) {
    #
    # fit double poisson diagonal inflated model
    loglike<-rep(0, maxit)
    lambda3<-1:n*0
    while ( (difllike>pres) && (i <= maxit) ) {
    i<-i+1
    ##### E step ######
    for (j in 1:n) {
        if (zero[j]) {
                s[j]<-0;
# calculation of log-likelihood
        if (x[j]==y[j]) {
            density.di<-di.f( 0.0, theta )
                    like[j]<-log( (1-prob)*exp(-
lambda1[j]-lambda2[j])+prob*density.di );
                                    vi[j]<-prob*density.di*exp(-
like[j]) }
        else{
            like[j]<-log(1-
prob)+log(dpois(x[j],lambda1[j]))+log(dpois(y[j],lambda2[j]));
                                    vi[j]<-0.0 ;}
    }
    else {
        if (x[j]==y[j]) {
                            density.di<-di.f( x[j],theta );
                            like[j]<-log( (1-prob)*dpois(
x[j],lambda1[j] )*dpois( y[j],lambda2[j] ) + prob*density.di );
                                vi[j] <- prob*density.di*exp( -
like[j] ) }
        else {
        vi[j]<-0.0;
                            like[j]<-log(1-prob)+log(
dpois(x[j],lambda1[j])*dpois(y[j],lambda2[j]) )}
        }
    }
#### end of E-step #########
```

```
    x1<-x;
    x2<-y;
    loglike[i]<-sum( like ) ;
    difllike<-abs( (loglike0-loglike[i])/loglike0 )
    loglike0<-loglike[i]
    #
    #
########### M-step #############
    # estimate mixing proportion
    prob<-sum(vi)/n
    #
    # maximization of each theta parameter
    if ( distribution == 1 ) {
            # calculation of theta_j, j=1,...,jmax ; theta_0=1-
sum(theta)
            if (jmax==0) { theta<-0 }
            else {
                for (ii in 1:jmax) {
                        temp<-as.numeric(( (x==ii) & (y==ii) ));
                        theta[ii]<-sum(temp*vi)/sum(vi)
                        }
        }
    }
    else if (distribution==2){
        # calculation of theta for poisson diagonal
inflation
        theta<- sum(vi*x)/sum(vi) }
    else if (distribution==3){
        # calculation of theta for geometric diagonal
inflation
                        theta<- sum(vi)/( sum(vi*x)+sum(vi) ) }
    #
    # fit model on lambda1 & lambda2
    #
    internal.data1$v1<- 1-c(vi,vi);
    internal.data1$v1[
(internal.data1$v1<0)&(internal.data1$v1>-1.0e-10) ]<-0.0
#
    x1[(x1<0)&(x1>-1.0e-10)]<-0.0
    x2[(x2<0)&(x2>-1.0e-10)]<-0.0
    internal.data1$y1y2<-c(x1,x2)
    m<-glm( formula1, family=poisson, data=data1,
weights=internal.data1$v1 , maxit=100)
```

```
    p3<-length(m$coef)
    beta<-m$coef
# ---------------------------------------------------------
# creating names for parameters
    names(beta)<-newnamesbeta( beta )
#
# end of name creations (l1, l2, l2-11, blank)
# -------------------------------------------------------
    betaparameters<-splitbeta( beta )
#
    lambda<-fitted(m)
    lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
    lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]
    #
    ##### end of M step ######
#
# printing also beta
    if (verbose) {
        printvec<- c( i,beta,100.0*prob, theta, loglike[i],
difllike );
        names(printvec)<-c( 'iter', names(beta),
'Mix.p(%)', paste( 'theta', 1:length(theta),sep='' ),
'loglike', 'Rel.Dif.loglike')
        }
# limited print out
    else {
        printvec<- c( i, 100.0*prob, theta, loglike[i],
difllike );
    names(printvec)<-c( 'iter','Mix.p(%)', paste(
'theta', 1:length(theta),sep='' ), 'loglike',
'Rel.Dif.loglike')
    }
    lengthprintvec<-length(printvec)
    print.default( printvec, digits=4 )
    }
#
# calculation of BIC and AIC for double poisson model
    if ( (distribution==1)&&(jmax==0) ){noparams<- m$rank +1}
    else
                                    {noparams<- m$rank +
length( theta ) +1}
    AIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * 2
    BIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * log(2*n)
```

\#

```
#
# Calculation of BIC, AIC of Poisson saturated model
    x.mean<-x
    x.mean[x==0]<-1e-12
    y.mean<-y
    y.mean[y==0]<-1e-12
    AIC.sat <- sum(log( dpois( x , x.mean ) ) + log( dpois(
y , y.mean ) ))
    BIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* log(2*n)
    AIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* 2
#
#
    AICtotal<-c(AIC.sat, AIC);
    BICtotal<-c(BIC.sat, BIC );
    names(AICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'DblPois')
    names(BICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'DblPois')
#
allbeta<-c(betaparameters$beta1,betaparameters$beta2)
    names(allbeta)<-c( paste( '(l1):',
names(betaparameters$beta1), sep='' ),paste('(l2):',
names(betaparameters$beta2), sep='' ) )
    allparameters<-c(allbeta, prob, theta)
    if (distribution==1){ names(allparameters)<-c(
names(allbeta), 'p', paste('theta', 1:length(theta),sep='') ) }
    else {names(allparameters)<-c( names(allbeta), 'p',
'theta') }
#
# calculation of fitted values
# ---------------------------
    fittedval1<-(1-prob)*m$fitted[1:n]
    fittedval2<-(1-prob)*m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)]
#
    meandiag<-0
    if ((distribution==1)&&(jmax>0)) { meandiag<-sum(
theta[1:jmax]*1:jmax ) }
    else if (distribution==2) { meandiag<-theta }
    else if (distribution==3) { meandiag<- (1-theta)/theta }
#
    fittedval1[x==y]<-prob*meandiag + fittedval1[x==y]
    fittedval2[x==y]<-prob*meandiag + fittedval2[x==y]
#
    result<-list(coefficients=allparameters,
```

```
    fitted.values=data.frame(x=fittedval1,y=fittedval2),
residuals=data.frame(x=x-fittedval1,y=y-fittedval2),
    beta1=betaparameters$beta1,
beta2=betaparameters$beta2, p=prob, theta=theta,
diagonal.distribution=dilabel,
    lambda1=m$fitted[1:n],
lambda2=m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)], loglikelihood=loglike[1:i],
parameters=noparams, AIC=AICtotal,
                                    BIC=BICtotal,iterations=i
call=tempcall)
#
#
# end of diagonal inflated double poisson model
}
else {
    loglike<-rep(0,maxit)
    while ( (difllike>pres) && (i <= maxit) ) {
    i<-i+1
    ##### E step ######
    for (j in 1:n) {
        if (zero[j]) {
        s[j]<-0;
#
                                    calculation of log-likelihood
                                if (x[j]==y[j]) {
                            density.di<-di.f( 0.0, theta )
                            like[j]<- log( (1-prob)*exp(-lambda1[j]-
lambda2[j]-lambda3[j])+prob*density.di );
                            vi[j]<-prob*density.di*exp(-like[j]) }
        else{
        like[j]<-log(1-prob)-lambda3[j]
+log(dpois(x[j],lambda1[j]))
        +log(dpois(y[j],lambda2[j]));
                                    vi[j]<-0.0 ;}
        }
        else {
                                lbp1<-pbivpois(x[j]-1, y[j]-1,
lambda=c(lambda1[j],lambda2[j],lambda3[j]), log=TRUE );
        lbp2<-pbivpois(x[j] , y[j]
lambda=c(lambda1[j],lambda2[j],lambda3[j]), log=TRUE );
        s[j]<-exp( log(lambda3[j]) + lbp1 - lbp2 );
#
    like[j]<-lbp2;
        if (x[j]==y[j]) {
                                    density.di<-di.f( x[j],theta );
```

```
like[j]<-log( (1-prob)*exp(lbp2) +
```

prob*density.di );
vi[j] <- prob*density.di*exp( -
like[j] ) \}
else \{
vi[j]<-0.0;
like[j]<-log(1-prob)+lbp2 \}
\}
\}
\#\#\#\# end of E-step \#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#
$\mathrm{x} 1<-\mathrm{x}-\mathrm{s}$;
x2<-y-s;
loglike[i]<-sum( like ) ;
difllike<-abs( (loglike0-loglike[i])/loglike0 )
loglike0<-loglike[i]
\#
\#
\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\# M-step \#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#\#
\# estimate mixing proportion
prob<-sum(vi)/n
\#
\# maximization of each theta parameter
if ( distribution == 1 ) \{
\# calculation of theta_j, j=1,...,jmax ; theta_0=1-
sum(theta)
\# cat (c('1:discrete, jmax=', jmax), '\n')
if (jmax==0)\{ theta<-0\}
else\{
for (ii in 1:jmax) \{
temp<-as.numeric(( (x==ii) \& (y==ii) ));
theta[ii]<-sum(temp*vi)/sum(vi)
\# print( c(ii, sum(temp), sum(vi),
sum(temp*vi) ) )
\}
\#
cat ( c('2:discrete, jmax=', jmax), '\n')
\}
\}
else if (distribution==2)\{
\# calculation of theta for poisson diagonal
inflation
theta<- sum(vi*x)/sum(vi) \}
else if (distribution==3)\{
\# else \{

```
                                    # calculation of theta for geometric diagonal
inflation
            theta<- sum(vi)/( sum(vi*x)+sum(vi) ) }
    # fit model on lambda3
        internal.data2$v1<- 1-vi;
        internal.data2$v1[
(internal.data2$v1<0)&(internal.data2$v1>-1.0e-10) ]<-0.0
#
    internal.data2$y3<-s;
    m0<-glm( formula2, family=poisson, data=data2,
weights=internal.data2$v1 , maxit=100)
    beta3<-m0$coef
    lambda3<-m0$fitted
    #
    # fit model on lambda1 & lambda2
    internal.data1$v1<- 1-c(vi,vi);
    internal.data1$v1[
(internal.data1$v1<0)&(internal.data1$v1>-1.0e-10) ]<-0.0
#
    x1[(x1<0)&(x1>-1.0e-10)]<-0.0
    x2[(x2<0)&(x2>-1.0e-10)]<-0.0
    internal.data1$y1y2<-c(x1,x2)
    m<-glm( formula1, family=poisson, data=data1,
weights=internal.data1$v1 , maxit=100)
    p3<-length(m$coef)
    beta<-m$coef
# ----
# creating names for parameters
    names(beta)<-newnamesbeta( beta )
# ----
    lambda<-fitted(m)
    lambda1<-lambda[1:n]
    lambda2<-lambda[(n+1):(2*n)]
    #
    ##### end of M step ######
#
# print all parameters including beta
    if (verbose) {
        printvec<- c( i,beta,beta3,100.0*prob, theta,
loglike[i], difllike );
            names(printvec)<-c( 'iter',
names(beta),paste('l3_',names(beta3),sep=''), 'Mix.p(%)',
paste( 'theta', 1:length(theta),sep='' ), 'loglike',
'Rel.Dif.loglike')
```

```
        }
#
# limited print out
        else {
                                printvec<- c( i, 100.0*prob, theta, loglike[i],
difllike );
    names(printvec)<-c( 'iter', 'Mix.p(%)', paste(
'theta', 1:length(theta),sep='' ), 'loglike',
'Rel.Dif.loglike')
    }
#
    lengthprintvec<-length(printvec)
    print.default( printvec, digits=4 )
    }
#
# calculation of BIC and AIC for bivpoisson model
    if ( (distribution==1)&&(jmax==0) ){noparams<- m$rank +
m0$rank + 1}
    else {noparams<- m$rank +
m0$rank + length( theta ) +1}
    AIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * 2
    BIC<- -2*loglike[i] + noparams * log(2*n)
#
#
# Calculation of BIC, AIC of Poisson saturated model
    x.mean<-x
    x.mean[x==0]<-1e-12
    y.mean<-y
    y.mean[y==0]<-1e-12
    AIC.sat <- sum(log( dpois( x , x.mean ) ) + log( dpois(
y , y.mean ) ))
    BIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* log(2*n)
    AIC.sat <- -2 * AIC.sat + (2*n)* 2
#
#
    AICtotal<-c(AIC.sat, AIC);
    BICtotal<-c(BIC.sat, BIC );
    names(AICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'BivPois')
    names(BICtotal)<-c('Saturated', 'BivPois')
#
#
# spliting parameter vector
    betaparameters<-splitbeta( beta )
#
```

    putting all betas in one vector
    allbeta<-c(betaparameters$beta1,betaparameters$beta2,
    beta3)

| names(allbeta)<-c( | paste( | '(11):', |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| nes(betaparameters\$beta1), | sep='' | ), paste('(12) |
| names(betaparameters\$beta2), | sep='' | ), paste('(13) |
| names(beta3), sep='' ) ) |  |  |
| allparameters<-c(allbeta, prob, theta) |  |  |
| if (distribution==1) |  | parameters) |
| names(allbeta), 'p', paste('theta', 1:length(theta), sep='') ) \} |  |  |
| else \{names(allparamet |  | lbeta) |

'theta') }

# 

# calculation of fitted values

# --------------------------

    fittedval1<-(1-prob)*(m$fitted[1:n] + lambda3)
    fittedval2<-(1-prob)*(m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)] + lambda3)
    
# 

    meandiag<-0
    if ((distribution==1)&&(jmax>0)) { meandiag<-sum(
    theta[1:jmax]*1:jmax ) }
else if (distribution==2) { meandiag<-theta }
else if (distribution==3) { meandiag<- (1-theta)/theta }

# 

    fittedval1[x==y]<-prob*meandiag + fittedval1[x==y]
    fittedval2[x==y]<-prob*meandiag + fittedval2[x==y]
    
# 

# 

# saving output

    result<-list(coefficients=allparameters,
    fitted.values=data.frame(x=fittedval1,y=fittedval2),
residuals=data.frame(x=x-fittedval1,y=y-fittedval2),
beta1=betaparameters$beta1,
beta2=betaparameters$beta2, beta3=beta3, p=prob, theta=theta,
diagonal.distribution=dilabel,
lambda1=m$fitted[1:n],
lambda2=m$fitted[(n+1):(2*n)], lambda3=lambda3,
loglikelihood=loglike[1:i],
parameters=noparams,
AIC=AICtotal,
BIC=BICtotal,iterations=i , call=tempcall)

# 

} \# end of elseif

# 

options(warn=0)

```
```

class(result)<-c('lm.dibp', 'lm')

# 

result

# 

# 

}

```

\section*{Function newnamesbeta}
"newnamesbeta" <-
function( bvec ) \{
\# Internal function for renaming parameters according to
their interpretation
    names(bvec)<-sub('\\)','', names(bvec))
        \#remove right parenthesis
    names(bvec)<-
sub('\\(Intercept','(Intercept)', names(bvec))
    \# replace "(Intercept" with "(Intercept)"
    names(bvec) [pmatch('internal.data1\$noncommon2', names(bvec
))]<-'(l2-11):(Intercept)' \# replace
'internal.data1\$noncommon2' with 'l2-11' for intercept
    names(bvec)<-sub('internal.data1\\\$noncommon2:','(12-
11):',names(bvec)) \# the same for the rest of
parameters
    names(bvec)<-
sub('internal.data1 \\\$noncommon0:','(l1):', names(bvec))
    \# replace 'internal.data1\\\$noncommon0:' by '(l1)'
    names(bvec)<-
sub('internal.data1\\\$noncommon1:','(12):', names(bvec))
            \# replace 'internal.data1\\\$noncommon1:' by '(12)'
    names(bvec)<-sub(':internal.data1 \\\$noncommon2', '(12-
11):',names(bvec)) \# same as above with ":" in
front of expressions
    names(bvec)<-
sub(':internal.data1\\\$noncommon0','(l1):',names(bvec))
    names(bvec)<-
sub(':internal.data1\\\$noncommon1','(12):', names(bvec))
    names(bvec)<-sub('I\\(internal.data1\\\$indct1 \\*
','(l1):',names(bvec)) \# replace
'I(internal.data1\$indct1 * ' with '(l1):'
```

    names(bvec)<-sub('I\\(internal.data1\\$indct2
    ','(l2):',names(bvec)) \# replace
'I(internal.data1\$indct2 * ' with '(l2):'
names(bvec)
}

```

\section*{Function splitbeta}
```

"splitbeta" <-
function( bvec ){

# Internal function for spliting beta parameters according

to their interpretation

# 

    p3<-length(bvec)
    indx1<-grep( '\\(l1\\):', names(bvec) ) # identify
    parameters for lambda1
indx2<-grep( '<br>(l2<br>):', names(bvec) ) \# identify
parameters for lambda2
indx3<-grep( '<br>(l2-l1<br>):', names(bvec) ) \# identify
difference parameters for lambda2

# 

# create temporary labels to identify common parameters

    tempnames<-sub( '\\(l2-l1)\\:', 'k', names(bvec) )
    tempnames<-sub( '\\(l2)\\:', 'k', tempnames )
    tempnames<-sub( '\\(l1)\\:', 'k', tempnames )
    indx4<-tempnames%in%names(bvec) # common parameters are
    identified as TRUE

# 

    beta1<-c(bvec[indx4],bvec[indx1])
    beta2<-c(bvec[indx4],bvec[indx3],bvec[indx2])
    indexbeta2<-c( rep(0,sum(indx4)), rep(1,length(indx3)),
    rep(2,length(indx2)) )
names(beta1)<-sub('<br>(l1<br>):','',names(beta1))
names(beta2)<-sub('<br>(l2<br>):','',names(beta2))
names(beta2)<-sub('<br>(l2-l1<br>):','',names(beta2))
beta1<-beta1[order(names(beta1))]
indexbeta2<-indexbeta2[order(names(beta2))]
beta2<-beta2[order(names(beta2))]

```
```

    ii<-1:length(beta2)
    ii<-ii[indexbeta2==0]
    for ( i in ii ) {
    
# beta2[i]<-sum( beta2[ grep( names(beta2)[i],

names(beta2) ) ] )
beta2[i]<-sum( beta2[ names(beta2)[i]==names(beta2)
] )
}
beta2<-beta2[indexbeta2%in%c(0,2)]
btemp<-list(beta1=beta1,beta2=beta2)
btemp
}

```

\section*{Main Part}
```

\#code
sl=read.csv("data/sl.csv",stringsAsFactors=T)
levels(sl[,2])
\#Evaluation of Covariates
attach(sl)
fit1=glm(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,family="poisson",data
=sl)
summary(fit1)
fit2=glm(g2~rat2+penbox2+goalbox2+corner2,family="poisson",data
=sl)
summary(fit2)
cor1=read.csv("data/correlation1.csv")
cor1
C=cor(cor1)
rownames(C)=c("Rating", "PenaltyBox", "GoalBox", "Corner")
colnames(C)=c("Rating","PenaltyBox","GoalBox", "Corner")
C
\#Fitting the bivariate Poisson model
biv=lm.bp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+goal
box2+corner2,11l2=NULL,data=sl)
biv$coefficients
biv$parameters
biv$iterations
biv$loglikelihood
biv\$lambda1

```
biv\$lambda2
biv\$lambda3
biv\$fitted.values
plot(biv\$fitted.values[,1],biv\$fitted.values[,2],main="Expected Goals",xlab="Home Team",ylab="Away Team")
plot(sl[,3],sl[,4])
plot(infg\$loglikelihood)
biv\$AIC
biv\$BIC
plot(1:biv\$iterations,biv\$loglikelihood,xlab="Iterations", ylab= "Log-Likelihood")
dbp=1m.bp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+goal
box2+corner2,1112=NULL, data=sl, zeroL3=TRUE)
dbp\$AIC
dbp\$BIC
\#Fitting the Diagonal Inflated Bivariate Poisson model (geometric)
infg=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+g oalbox2+corner2,l112=NULL, data=sl,distribution="geometric")
infg\$coefficients
infg\$fitted.values
infg\$diagonal.distribution
infg\$loglikelihood
infg\$AIC
infg\$BIC
\#\#Fitting the Diagonal Inflated Bivariate Poisson model (Discrete)
inf1=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+g
oalbox2+corner2,l112=NULL, data=sl,jmax=1)
inf1\$coefficients
inf1\$diagonal.distribution
inf1\$loglikelihood
inf1\$AIC
inf1\$BIC
\#Fitting the Inflated Double Poisson model
infdp=lm.dibp(g1~rat1+penbox1+goalbox1+corner1,g2~rat2+penbox2+
goalbox2+corner2, l112=NULL, data=sl, zeroL3=TRUE, jmax=1)
infdp\$coefficients
infdp\$fitted.values
infdp\$loglikelihood
infdp\$AIC
infdp\$BIC
sum=rbind(c(biv\$parameters,-1029.576,
2081.151,2133.271
,0), c(inf1\$parameters,-1029.576,2085.153 ,2146.749 , 1.305e-
02), c(infg\$parameters,-1029.576,2085.151 ,2146.747 ,1.680e05), c(infdp\$parameters, \(-1030.476,2084.952,2141.810,4.602 e-02)\) ) rownames(sum)=c("Bivariate Poisson","Inflated with Discrete(1)","Inflated with Geometric","Inflated DoublePoisson")
colnames(sum)=c("Parameters", "Loglikelihood", "AIC", "BIC", "Mix.P rop(p)")
sum
\#Karlis and Ntzoufras model
slsc=read.csv("data/sl_scores.csv",stringsAsFactors=T)
slsc
form1=~c(team1,team2)+c(team2,team1)
bivsc=lm.bp(g1~1,g2~1, l112=form1, data=slsc)
bivsc\$coefficients
bivsc\$AIC
bivsc\$BIC
\#comparison
comp=rbind(c(-1.029576e+03, 2081.151,2133.271), c(\(1.098 \mathrm{e}+03,2269.030,2444.342)\) )
rownames(comp)=c("Bivariate Poisson","Bivariate Poisson (goals as cov)")
colnames(comp)=c("Loglikelihood", "AIC", "BIC")
comp
\#PREDICTION
ratA \(=(141+169+146+123+237+98+234+169+174+202+174+106+162) / 13 ;\) ra tA
penboxA \(=(3+1+3+4+1+6+2+4+3+1+3+5+3) / 13\); penboxA
goalboxA \(=(0+0+0+0+0+1+0+1+2+1+0+0+0) / 13\); goalboxA
cornerA \(=(1+3+5+5+4+1+3+2+4+1+11+2+5) / 13\); cornerA
ratP \(=(114+127+172+181+84+153+144+121+194+118+153+162+127) / 13 ;\) ra
tP
penboxP \(=(0+2+4+9+1+2+2+4+4+2+1+5+0) / 13\); penboxP
goalboxP=(1+0+1+2+2+2+2+1+1+0+0+1+1)/13; goalboxP
cornerP \(=(3+4+5+9+5+2+1+3+0+2+6+8+2) / 13\); cornerP
11=exp(-
\(1.281071082+0.008715946 *\) ratA+0.024295455*penboxA+0.100234116*go
alboxA-0.030432260*cornerA);11
12=exp(-
\(1.705548672+0.009189555 *\) ratP \(+0.087018910 *\) penboxP+0.197741080*go alboxP-0.048838609*cornerP);12
13=0.0665655;13
pred=bivpois.table(8,8,lambda=c(l1,12,13));pred
sum(diag(pred))
print(sum(pred[lower.tri(pred)]))
```

print(sum(pred[upper.tri(pred)]))
\#VERIFICATION
X=0.3004748+0.4240807+0.2754379
x

```

\section*{A3. The Newton-Raphson method}

The Newton-Raphson method which is named after Isaac Newton and Joseph Raphson, is an iterative technique for finding the root in functions when this cannot be found in a straightforward way.
Let us consider the non-linear equation,
\[
x: f(x)=0
\]

By starting with some value \(x_{0}\), the method computes a sequence of approximations \(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots\) which converge to the solution \(x^{*}\left(f\left(x^{*}\right)=\right.\) 0 ) of the non-linear equation.
We start from the Taylor expansion of function \(f\) around the point \(x_{n}\),
\[
f\left(x_{n+1}\right)=f\left(x_{n}\right)+\left(x_{n+1}-x_{n}\right) f^{\prime}\left(x_{n}\right)+\frac{\left(x_{n+1}-x_{n}\right)^{2}}{2} f^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{n}\right)+\cdots
\]

If we neglect the higher order terms, we find
\[
f\left(x_{n+1}=f\left(x_{n}\right)+\left(x_{n+1}-x_{n}\right) f^{\prime}\left(x_{n}\right)\right.
\]

If we then require \(f\left(x_{n+1}\right)\) to be equal to zero, we obtain
\[
x_{n+1}=x_{n}-\frac{f\left(x_{n}\right)}{f^{\prime}\left(x_{n}\right)}
\]

There fore,
\[
\begin{aligned}
& x_{1}=x_{0}-\frac{f\left(x_{0}\right)}{f^{\prime}\left(x_{0}\right)} \\
& x_{2}=x_{1}-\frac{f\left(x_{1}\right)}{f^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)} \\
& x_{3}=x_{2}-\frac{f\left(x_{2}\right)}{f^{\prime}\left(x_{2}\right)}
\end{aligned}
\]

The Newton-Raphson method is generalized for the case of systems with \(n\) equations with \(n\) unknowns. We may write the system
\[
\left\{\begin{array}{c}
f_{1}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0 \\
f_{2}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0 \\
\cdot \\
\cdot \\
\cdot \\
f_{n}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)=0
\end{array}\right.
\]

We consider \(f: X \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}\) defined as \(f(x)=f_{1}(x), \ldots, f_{2}(x)\)
We want to find a vector \(r=\left(r_{1}, \ldots, r_{n}\right)\) such that \(f(r)=0\). To approximate such a vector \(r\), we may make an initial guess \(x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}\). If \(f\) is differentiable, then we know that \(y=f(x)\) is approximated by the equation
\[
y=f\left(x_{0}\right)+D f\left(x_{0}\right)\left(x-x_{0}\right)
\]
where \(D f\left(x_{0}\right)\) is the \(n \times n\) matrix of the first derivative of \(f\).

We set \(y=0\) in order to find where this approximating function is zero. Thus, we solve the matrix equation
\[
f\left(x_{0}\right)+D f\left(x_{0}\right)\left(x_{1}-x_{0}\right)=0
\]
with \(x_{1}\) giving a revised approximation to the root \(r\). Evidently the equation above is equivalent to
\[
D f\left(x_{0}\right)\left(x_{1}-x_{0}\right)=-f\left(x_{0}\right)
\]

To continue our argument, suppose that \(D f\left(x_{0}\right)\) is an invertible \(n \times n\) matrix. Then we multiply the equation by \(\left[D f\left(x_{0}\right)\right]^{-1}\) to obtain
\[
I_{n}\left(x_{1}-x_{0}\right)=-\left[D f\left(x_{0}\right)\right]^{-1} f\left(x_{0}\right) .
\]

Similarly to the one-variable case of the method of the NewtonRaphson method, we may iterate the formula to define a sequence \(\left\{x_{k}\right\}\) of vectors by,
\[
x_{k}=x_{k-1}-\left[D f\left(x_{0}\right)\right]^{-1} f\left(x_{k-1}\right)
\]```

